	1.e			
	,	*	e .	1
National Library Biblioth of Canada du Cana	eque nationale da	CANADIAN THESES	THÈSES CANADIENNE SUR MICROFICHE	s
	:	· •	•	
		· · · · ·		
		•	n .	
	an a	1		л. Х
	•	•		
			* * *	
	Const locald Mi			•
	Larry Arnold Mi	·	,	:
the contract of the table of the contribution of the state of the stat	n investigation	intio the Relat	ionsnip of Anap	norie
Hef	erence and Rea	ding Comprehensio	on of Grade Two	Pupils
	/	· •		
to the the state of the University of the State of the St	ty of Alberta		1	
CHERRY AND AND HITHEUS NAS PRESENT DEFICIENCES DE LE CETTE THESE FUT	É C		· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	······································
	- OBTENTION DE CL GRAGE	May , 1976	•	
AND FOR SOR WOULDURECTED				
	····		· · ·	
		<u>م</u>	·	
Permission is hereby granted to the		L'autorisation est, pa	r la présente, accordée à	i la BIBLIOTHÈ-
$\sim$ ALADA to microfile this thesis and	to lend or sell copies	QUE NATIONALE DU	CANADA, de microfilmei	vette thèse et
jbe tilm."		de prêter ou de vendre	des exemplaires du film	Ģ
· iter author reserves other publication	rights, and neither the	L'auteur se réserve	les autres droits de pui	5lication: ni la
means nor extensive extracts from it r	nav be printed or other-		its de celle-ci ne doiven	
where reproduced without the author's $\boldsymbol{w}$	ritten permission.	ou-autrement-reproduits	s sans l'autorisation écri	ite de l'auteur.
January 22, 197	D' SHGNED (SZÁMZ			
	Faculty of E	ducation		
TO A THE CONDUCTOR STATE AND A CONTRACT OF A CONTRACT. CONTRACT OF A CONTRACT OF A CONTRACT OF A CONTRACT. CONTRACT OF A CONTRACT OF A CONTRACT OF A CONTRACT. CONTRACT OF A CONTRACT. C	.wueen's Univ			
· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	Kingston, On	tario		•/*
· · ·	•	•		

#### INF, RMATION TO USERS

# THIS DISSERTATION HAS BEEN MICROFILMED EXACTLY AS RECEIVED

This copy was produced from a microficture copy of the original document. The quality of the copy is heavily dependent upon the quality of the original tuests submitted for a ricrofilming. Every effort has then made to ensure the highest quality of reproduction possible.

PLEASE NOTE: Some pages may have indistinct print. Eilmed as proceived. AV-IS AUX USAGERS

#### LA THESE A ETE MICROFILMEE TELLE QUE NOUS L'AVONS RECUE

Cette copie a été faite à partir d'une microfiche du document original. La qualité de la copie dépend grandement de la qualité de la thèse soumise pour le microfimage. Nous avons tout fait pour assurer une qualité supérfeure de reproduction.

NOTA BENE: La qualité d'impression ( de certaines pages peut laisser à désirer. Microfilmée telle que nous l'avons reçue.

Division des thèses canadiennes Direction du catalogage Bibliothèque nationale du Canada Ottawa, Canada KIA ON4

Canadian Theses Division Cataloguing Branch National Library of Canada Ottawa, Canada K17 ON4

Q

THE UNIVERSITY OF ALBERTA

8

AN INVESTIGATION INTO THE RELATIONSHIP OF ANA HEALTER

REFERENCE AND READING COMPREHENSION OF GRADE

## TWO PUPILS

by .

Larry Arnold Miller

# A THESIS

SUBALTTED TO THE FACULTY OF GRADUATE STUDIES AND RESEARCH IN PARTIAL FULFILLMENT OF THE REQUIREMENTS FOR THE DEGREE

OF DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

DEPARTMENT OF ELEMENTARY EDUCATION

EDMONTON, ALBERTA

SPRING, 1976

#### UNIVERSITY OF ALBERTA

FACULTY (F GRÁDUATE STUDIES AND RESEARCH

The undersigned certify that they have road; and recommend to the Faculty of Graduate Studies and Research for acceptance, a thesis entitled "An Investigation into the Relationship of Anaphoric Reference and Reading Comprehension of Grade Two Pupils" submitted by Larry Arnold Miller in partial fulfilment of the requirements for the degree of Ph.D. in Elementary Education.

0

Date

Supervisor ć Extérnal, Examiner ť,

#### ABSTRACT

The major purpose of this study was to investigate the ability of High and Low Readers to comprehend the basically syntactic aspect of language known as the anteodent/anaphora relationship. Specific focus was on three possible variables that may contribute to the reader's inability to comprehend this relationship. These variables were: (1) the number of antecedents interacting in a discourse; (2) the distance between the antecedent and anaphora; (3) the anaphoric category (categories were devised on the basis of form and function).

An ancillary purpose of the study was to examine relationship. between oral language production of anaphora and comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship on written language.

The sample used in the study consisted of one hundred children enrolled in their second year of school in a large western, Canadian city. The use of children enrolled in grade two was important in that prior research had shown some children at this level lacked mastery of the grammatical phenomenon under study.

A selected subsample of forty-eight children was chosen to participate in an oral language production task. The oral language production of these children was compared with performance on the written language measures (TAR).

To examine the children's ability to comprehend the antecedent/ anaphora relationship the investigator constructed the Tests of Anaphoric Reference (TAR). All the dependent variables were built into the passages used in the TAR and thus were reflected in the children's scores on these tests.

The statistical design of the study was basically a 2 X 2

iv

factorial with the above mentioned dependent, variables. Analyses of covariance, with grouping by reader level and sex, were the principal statistical procedures used in the investigation. The covariate in all analyses was the children's word recognition scores.

The results of the study indicated that the High Reader's scores were significantly superior to those of Low Readers on all dependent variables. This superiority was consistent even when the effects of word identification ability were partialled out.

It was concluded that the addition of antecedents to a discourse caused difficulty for readers at this level. An increase in distance between antecedent and anaphora is also an interfering factor especially for Low Readers. The effects of anaphoric category which reflected case relationships, were mixed. However, it was clear that some cases, particularly the genitive, are more difficult than others.

The relationship between oral language production of anaphora and the comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship was such that the high producers of anaphora tended to score lower on the specially designed written language tests of anaphoric reference (TAR). This finding indicates that the relationship between oral language production and reading comprehension may not be as direct as some researchers have suggested.

The investigation indicated that further research is needed in relation to the factors that may interfere with comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship. Also, the relationship between oral language production of anaphora and comprehension of antecedent and anaphora in written language requires further study.

V

#### ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Many individuals at The University of Alberta have influenced this dissertation through their direct assistance. Others have provided background through their excellent courses. I would like to acknowledge this help.

Dr. William T. Fagan, my advisor, has provided assistance in many ways. Whether it was asking an insightful question or providing a new source of information he always exemplified the role of advisor. For all the aid (and friendship) I am deeply grateful.

Dr. Gary Prideaux of the Department of Linguistics served on the advisory committee of this thesis. In addition to his direct advice, the courses of Dr. Prideaux, and his colleague Dr. Bruce Derwing, provided a welcome background for many aspects of the study.

Dr. Jean Robertson, a member of the advisory committee, asked many scholarly questions during the writing of the thesis. These questions required the author to clarify and focus his thinking on many crucial issues.

Dr. D. Sawada, Department of Elementary Education, Dr. R. Jackson, Department of Elementary Education, and Dr. A. MacKay, Chairman of the Department of Elementary Education, all offered helpful criticism and suggestions.

It was indeed a pleasure to have Dr. Carl Braun of the University of Calgary as my external examiner. His probing questions and suggestions contributed significantly to the study.

Finally, I wish to thank my wife, Mary Ann, who read many drafts of the research project, offered continual support, and never complained.

vi

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

•

Chapter		lupo
ł	INTRODUCTION AND STATEMENT OF THE PROBLEM	I
	Introduction	1
,	Purpose of the Study	2
	Overview of the Design of the Study	1,
	Definition of Terms	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
ж	Derivation of the Hypotheses	9
	Significance of the Study	12
	Delimitations and Limitations of the Study	13
2	REVIEW OF RELATED LITERATURE: A THEORY OF READING	15
- · · · ·	Theories and Models of Reading	15
	Discrimination	17
• •	Word Identification	18 ·
κ.	Comprehension: Semantic and Syntactic Cues	19
	Studies of Semantics	21
×	Studies of Syntax	22
	Characteristics of Discourse	29
	A Theory of Reading	30
3.	RELATED LITERATURE: LINGUISTIC SUBSTITUTION AND PRONOMINAL REFERENCE	33
ing	Traditional Grammar	34
	Priestly, Ward, and Murray	35-
	Historical Grammars	37
	Sweet	37
	Jespersen	38
	Descriptive or Structural Grammars	40
	Vii	

 $l_{i}$ 

5

•	Page
Bloomffeld	<i>f</i> ,0
	41
Other Structural Linguistics	
Harris	1, 1
Crymen and Basens, is a subject of the second se	
Generative Grammar	45
Pronominalization in a Generative Freesework	1.14 14.1
Summary,	11.5
FRONOMINAL SUPERFUTION IN WRITTEN AND GREEL LAN-WAGE AND ITS RELATIONSHIP TO READING COMPREHENSION	(s.)
Readability Studies	52
Studies that Directly Investigated the Problem of Substitution in Written Language	55
Summary	60 *
Language Acquisition and Pronominal Substitution	60
Cbservational Studies	50
Imitation and Comprehension Studies	67
Oral Language and the Beginning Reader	70
Summary	72
THE EXPERIMENTAL DESIGN	74
Classification of the Anaphora	$7l_{1}$
Selection of the Sample	76
Standardized Instruments	81
Gates-MacGinitie Seading Test	31
Lorge-Thorndike Intelligence Test	81
The Detroit Tests of Learning Aptitude	\$3
Analysis of the Basal Readers	83
Word Recognition Test	88

,

ó

•	Inge
Construction of the Easages Mard in the study	210
Incidence of Anghora	940
Number of Characters and Antecedents	<b>9</b> 1
Thatance etween interelent onto process	-
Other modifications of the Passages	- 4 ×.
Tests of Anaphoric Reference-Multiple Choice Format (TAR-MC)	s à s
Walidity	·4 .
Reliability	127
Administration	$\Sigma^{(1)}$
Tests of Anaphoric Reference-Cloze Format (TAR-C)	YH
Reliability	1.x)
Oral Language Production	100
The Filot Study	10.1
Collection of the Data	104
Treatment of the Data	105
Cloze Scores,	J ()~
Analysis of Covariance	107
Analysis of Variance	ım
Computations of Correlations	107
Analysis of Variance with Repeated Measures	103
t-Tests	108
Surmary	109
FINDINGS: COMPREHENSION OF THE ANTECEDENT/ANAPHORA RELATIONSHIP	111
Differences between High and Low Reader's Ability to Comprehend the Antecedent/Anaphora Relationship when the Effects of the Number of Antecedents Are Consid-	
ored	111

# Startor

.

\*

TAR C	\$ 4 _ 1
TAR 1, Form 1	
TAR C, COR 2	1
α χ <sup>α</sup> ια τη αγγοριατία του	Ŧ
TAR Ma, Borm I	100
TAR MAL Some construction of the second s	
soughters and a second s	÷
Lifferences between nist and Les besterts (bility to Scoprebers) the Spinosenerts brach as cellstionship when the Ffrents of listure between Spinosent and Anghora are Consingred	
TAR-S, Form L	Neg 11
TAR-1, Ferm 1 (Geo Propositions)	• •
TAR-D, Form 1 (For Propositions)	•
TAMA N, Roma	
TAR-S, Form. (C Inspositions)	113
TAR-D, Fort . (Sef Eropopitions)	
	7 ° )
CAR-MO, Form L	
TAR-MC, Form 1 (C-2 Propositions)	1
TAR-MD, Form I (9-5 Propositions)	
	n e A to a
PAR-MO, Form & (constropositions)	3 
TAR-20, Form 2 (3-5 Propositions)	ана. 1. ак. ак.
Stand by	а, то с , , ф. яс., н.,
Differences between Wirh and Low Reader's Ability to Comprehend the Antecedent/Anaphora delationship when the Effects of Anaphoric Category Are Considered	1

.

•

ł	₹١	<b>.</b> ۳,	e	

.

TAR C. Forth L	۰.
TAR C. Form 1 (Catopory 1)	
TARCE, Form 1 1 storogy of	1
and a second	
	· 
	, - <sup>-</sup>
Marken (1), Brattana (1), and example a financial and a second second second second second second second second	1
Wikel, Semple Stitlegeny (Clinical Constraint)	( )
TAL 1. Form a Category (*)	1 1
l'anneny,	م د
Tak-18, Form 1	1.00
TARGET, Form 1 (Secondary 1)	
PAL-M., Form D. (Dategory	
TAG-DU, Form 1 (Category Commencements)	
TAB-20, Form	4 () 4 ()
TABLAND, Forma Clategory 1	
Talabi, Form a (lategory al	
National, Forma (Category Vi	
la serie serie Character de la constante de la	4.
The Effects of Number of Antecedente on Subjects! Ability to Comprehend the Antecedent Anythers	
Relationship	يەر يەرىم
Summary	n lan minin
The Effects of Cistance on dubjects! Ability to Comprehent the Antecedent/Anaphors Relationship	136
Summerry	ч. т жары

	be diffect of the hege of the start py and the test	
	Elsty Construction of the end of the education of the state of the	
	n la fil maleta a construction de la constru construction de la construction de la constr	n ya Antonio Santa
	Seturnative set and the set of the	$^{\circ}$ $I_{\bullet}$ $^{\circ}$
WKD AN VE 2005	First Construction and Construction a	
. 4	na d <b>en leste</b> o de lo instructo dinesna stato no di constante de la constante de	
	Connery	
.`} \:T	le Benformanne on Disil and lee inge ne Brooker nine Dike oppiniske®	м. н. На
	e Selstien min between Intelligence and Myrebension af the Anteredent/Image of Cationship	
	e Belation dir Setween Visual Second och and Microanae and Se Dille and Discension, and a second	
20 <u>200</u>	ESE, CONTRACTOR AND INFLEMENTED AND AND AND AND AND AND AND AND AND AN	
с. Колоноро	many of the study	. N. 1
	and and a star and a star and a star and a star a star A star a star	Sec. Sec. Sec. Sec. Sec. Sec. Sec. Sec.
	Coy-Corl of the state of the second	1. 1. 1. 1. 1
	burrer of attractor	
	listance retures intervient and insportant, sources	. e-
	Anaphinia (Steponomessississississississis)	
	Cal Language Production of Churchers on a Comprehension of the Anteoplent Chappers Relationship in Written Language	9 m.
	e Contributions of Shie Study	

		•
Chapter		Page
•	Psycholinguistics	177
	Implications for Instructional Programs	179
•	Implications for Teacher Education	182
х 	Suggestions for Further Research	184
	Limitations of the Findings	187
• 	Concluding Statement	188
REFERENC	ES	189
APPENDIC	ÊS	205
A	Tests of Anaphoric Reference	
B	Word Recognition Test	237
C	Oral Language Task	245
D	Guidelines for Determining a Proposition	
E	Scheme for Classification of Anaphora	255

xi i i

c

Ş

# LIST OF TABLES

. . . .

		 LIST OF TABLES	•••	•
	Table		Page	
	5.1	MEAN GRADE LEVEL SCORES, AND RANGE OF SCORES FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE ON THE GATES-MACGINITIE READING TEST (1965), PRIMARY B, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)	80	
·	5.2	MEAN CHRONOLOGICAL AGES IN MONTHS, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)		
-	5.3	 MEANS AND RANGE OF INTELLIGENCE QUOTIENTS, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)	82	•,
	5.4	MEANS AND RANGE OF SCORES FOR VISUAL MEMORY POR LETTERS ON THE DETROIT TESTS OF LEARNING APTITUDE, SUBTEST 16, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)	84	•
	5.5	DISTRIBUTION OF THE ANAPHORIC CATEGORIES IN GRADE TWO BASAL READERS		
- -	5.6	MEANS AND RANGE OF SCORES ON THE WORD RECOGNITION TEST, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)	89	•
,	5.7	TAR-C TEST-RETEST RELIABILITY (N=30)		
•	5.8	CONSTRUCTION OF THE PICTURES USED IN THE ORAL LANGUAGE PRODUCTION TASK	. 102	
	6.1	MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF THE TAR-C, FORM 1 (2 ANTECEDENTS) AND TAR-C, FORM 2 (4 ANTECEDENTS BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)	S) 112	
	6.2	MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF THE TAR-MC, FORM 1 (2 ANTECEDENTS) AND TAR-MC, FORM 2 (4 ANTECEDENTS) BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)	114	
-	6.3	MEAN SOCRES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF DISTANCE FACTOR EETWEEN ANTECEDENT AND ANAPHORA FOR THE TAR-C, FORM 1, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)	117	
L.	6.4	MEAN SOCRES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF DISTANCE FACTOR BETWEEN ANTECEDENT AND ANAPHORA FOR THE TAR-C, FORM 2, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)	119	
5 5	6.5	MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF DISTANCE FACTOR EETWEEN ANTECEDENT AND ANAPHORA FOR THE TAR-MC, FORM 1, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)	120	
	6.6	MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF DISTANCE FACTOR BETWEEN ANTECEDENT AND ANAPHORA FOR THE TAR-MC, FORM 2, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)	121	
2		xiv		

• 7

. <del>-</del>

4

5 5

<u>^</u>

Table				
Tapte	•	, ~	Page	,
6.7	MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF ANA	™		
	CATEGORIES ON THE TAR-C, FORM 1, BY READER	LEVEL	•	
	AND SEX (N=100)	•••••••	. 124	· .
6.8	MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF ANA	PHORIC	- ·	<u>.</u>
	- CATEGORIES ON THE TAR-C. FORM 2 BY READER	TEVEL		
· · ·	AND SEX (N=100)	• • • • • • • • • • • • •	. 126	
6.9	MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF ANA	PHORIC	•	
	CATEGORIES ON THE TAR-MC. FORM 1 BY READE	R IFVET		
	AND SEX (N=100)	•••••••	129	4
6.10	MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF ANA	PHORIC	•	
	CATEGORIES ON THE TAR-MC, FORM 2, BY READER	LEVEL	· ·	
	AND SEA (N=100)	••••••••••	131	
6.11	t-TEST VALUES FOR TAR-C, FORM 1 (2 ANTECEDE	ENTS) VERSUS		
-	FORM 2 (4 ANTECEDENTS) FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE	E (N=100)	134	
6.12	t-TEST VALUES FOR TAR-MC, FORM 1 (2 ANTECEI	- THATS) - VERSUS		
	FORM 2 (4 ANTECEDENTS) FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE	C (№=100)	135.	
6.13		•		
•	t-TEST VALUES FOR TAR-C, FORM 1 (0-2 PROPOS VERSUS (3-5 PROPOSITIONS) FOR THE TOTAL SAM	਼ ਹਾਸ		•
· · ·	(N=100)	••••••••••••••	137	
6.14	t-TEST VALUES FOR TAR-C, FORM 2 (0-2 PROPOS			•
•	VERSUS (3-5 PROPOSITIONS) FOR THE TOTAL SAME	DIF		•
· •	(N=100)	* • • • • • • • • • • • •	138	e.
6.15	t-TEST VALUES FOR TAR-MC, FORM 1 (0-2 PROPO	STUTONS)	•	•
		יי דרד i	- ,	
	(N=100)	• • • • • • • • • • • • •	140	
6.16	t-TEST VALUESFOR TAR-AT FORM 2/0 2 PROPOS	TTTONE		
	VERSUS (3-5 PROPOSITIONS) FOR THE TOTAL SAME	ਸ ਾ ਹ	•	
	(N=100)	• • • • • • • • • • • • •	141 ,	L.
6.17	COMPARISONS OF AMAPHORIC CATEGORIES THAT DI	FFER	· · · ·	
21 x <sup>1</sup>	SIGNIFICANTLY, ON TAB-C. FORM 1 FOR THE TO	PAT		• •
	SAMPLE (N=100)		. 1.44	, <i>o</i>
6.18	COMPARISONS OF ANAFHORIC CATEGORIES THAT DI	FER .		
•	SIGNIFICANTLY, CN TAR-C. FORM 2. FOR THE TOT	141		•
	SAMPLE (N=100)		145	
6.19	COMPARISONS OF ANAPHORIC CATEGORIES THAT DIF	FER		6 9 9 9
•	SIGNIFICANTLY, ON TAR-MD. FORM 1. FOR THE TO	mar °		
- -	SAMPLE (N=100)	• • • • • • • • • • • •	146	
$\sim$	a the second			
~ • 0	<u>م</u>		·. ·	
	XV			

Table		Page
6.20	COMPARISONS OF ANAPHORIC CATEGORIES THAT DIFFER SIGNIFICANTLY, ON TAR-MC, FORM 2, FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE (N=100)	147
7.1	MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS FOR ANAPHORA PRODUCTION IN GRAL LANGUAGE, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=48)	150
7.2	ORAL LANGUAGE PRODUCTION MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS FOR CATEGORIES 1, 2, AND 7, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=48)	151
7.3	MEAN PERCENTAGES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF ANAPHORA IN RELATION TO TOTAL NUMBER OF WORDS PRODUCED, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=48)	153
7.4	MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF HIGH AND LOW ANAPHORA PRODUCERS ON THE TAR-C AND TAR-MC (N=48)	- 155
7.5	t-TEST COMPARISONS FOR THE TAR-C AND TAR-MC BY ORAL-LANGUAGE PRODUCTION GROUP (N=48)	<b>/</b> 155
7.6	CORRELATIONS BETWEEN INTELLIGENCE AND SCORES ON , THE TAR-C AND TAR-MC (N=100)	156
7.7	CORRELATIONS BETWEEN VISUAL MEMORY SPAN SCORES ON THE TAR-C AND TAR-MC (N=100)	158

:1

## LIST OF FIGURES

Figure	Page	
2.1	AN ADAPTION OF GOODMAN'S 1970 MODEL TO ILLUSTRATE EARLY SILENT READING	
3.1	GENERAL CHARACTERISTICS OF PRONOUNS OVER FOUR LINGUISTIC PERIODS	<b>`</b>
4.1	BORMUTH'S CLASSIFICATION OF ANAPHORA	
6.1	INTERACTION BETWEEN READER LEVEL AND SEX ON TAR-C, FORM 1 (N=100) 113	•
۰6.2	INTERACTION BETWEEN READER LEVEL AND SEX ON TAR-C, FORM 1 (0-2 PROPOSITIONS) (N=100) 118	
6.3	<sup>°</sup> INTERACTION BETWEEN READER LEVEL AND SEX ON TAR-C, FORM 1 (CATEGORY 1) (N=100) 124	
6.4	INTERACTION BETWEEN READER LEVEL AND SEX ON TAR-C, FORM 2 (CATEGORY 7) (N=100) 128	
8.1	AN ADAPTION OF GOODMAN'S 1970 MODEL TO ILLUSTRATE EARLY SILENT READING	·
8.2	PARTIAL REPLICATION OF THE J. MACKWORTH SCHEMATIC MODEL OF THE READING PROCESS	

xvii

#### CHAPTER 1

### INTRODUCTION AND STATEMENT OF THE PROBLEM

Introduction  $\mathbb{S}^{\circ}$ 

While it is true that we are interested in the pedagogy of reading, we cannot be sure that it is being taught until we have found out what it is. To put it another way-we have to know how to recognize and identify reading behavior before we can productively study methods of producing reading behavior. (Raygor, 1971, p. 9)

Raygor's comment, part of his presidential address to the Nineteenth Annual Meeting of the National Reading Conference, elucidates the need for establishing priorities in reading research. It would appear that effective pedagogy should develop from a knowledge of the reading process.

In seeking this end, many researchers have focused their attention on the correlates of the reading act (e.g., perception, intelligence, etc.). While these correlates, and the disciplines under whose aegis they fall, are crucial to the understanding of reading behavior, one must not permit them to become 'ends unto themselves'. In recent years the discipline of linguistics has often been permitted to become this 'end unto itself'. Aukerman (1971) supports this contention by pointing out that, "...some basal readers now boldly claim to be linguistically oriented without so much as a revision in their text (pp. 141-142)." Since all written material is linguistic in nature it appears that some publishers are attempting to capitalize on consumer ignorance. Although some authors and publishers have permitted linguistics to become a dominant force in reading materials, others have thoughtfully applied certain linguistic tenets to increase

our knowledge of the reading process. Needless to say, the process of reading cannot be directly observed. Today, many researchers who are engaged in psycholinguistic analysis are concerned about the relative importance of syntax and semantics in language (Gibson, 1972; Hamilton and Deese, 1970; Mehler and Carey, 1968, 1967; Sachs, 1966; Miller, 1962). Schlesinger (1966) has thoughtfully pointed out that a complete separation of syntax and semantics is untenable. This relationship is of vital importance in understanding the process of reading.

The semantic element in the act of reading has been the focus of numerous investigations (Dale, Razik, and Petty, 1974). However, recent research has shown that certain syntactic relationships are not well understood by some children (Bormuth et al., 1974). Syntactic relationships are important in the act of reading because they signal information within and between sentences.

Anaphora, a word that substitutes for, or refers to, another word, group of words, or topic in a passage, would seemingly be classed as a purely syntactic phenomenon. However, using personal pronouns as an example, one is able to discern certain semantic information inherent in the word. For example, the word <u>he</u>, although obviously relying on some other word, its referent, for interpretation, does possess certain semantic information. One can identify the referent as a singular male by the form of the pronoun alone.

In reading, certain processes are involved in the comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship. It appears that the anaphora, along with its limited semantic information such as gender and number is identified. Next, the word, group of words, or topic which the anaphora substitutes for, or refers to, must be recalled or located.

This remembering or locating process might be referred to as the "awareress of the antecedent/anaphora relationship". Although there has been some speculation, and research, indicating that awareness of the antecedent/anaphora relationship is not an equally difficult task for all readers, the conclusions cannot be considered definitive. Indeed, if one considers the two major studies that have examined the reader's understanding of the antecedent/anaphora relationship (Bormuth, Manning, Carr, and Pearson, 1970; Lesgold, 1974) there appear to be two distinct, and contradictory views as to the difficulty of certain anaphoric categories. This difference is especially evident in the category of personal pronouns.

The studies mentioned in the previous paragraph focused upon the difficulty children have in understanding the antecedent/anaphora when various anaphoric categories are considered (e.g., personal pronouns, numeric pronominal, proverb, etc.). Difficulty was calculated on the basis of the percentage of children who comprehended a grammatical structure which represented the anaphoric category being tested. No attempt was made in either investigation to examine the variables that may affect comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship.

#### Purpose of the Study

The purpose of this study was to investigate the abilities of two groups of readers, those high in general reading ability and those low in general reading ability, to comprehend the grammatical phenomenon known as the antecedent/anaphora relationship. Specific focus was on the investigation of possible intervening factors that may contribute to the reader's inability to understand this relationship.

These factors which appeared to interact in a discourse were: (a) the number of antecodents, (b) the dislance between antecedent and anaphora, and (c) the formal aspects of the anaphoric form (e.g., nominative. objective, and genitive case).

A secondary purpose of the study was to investigate the relationship between oral language production of anaphora and reading comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship. The study of this relationship was accomplished on a group basis by comparing the oral language production of anaphora with understanding of the antecedent/ anaphora relationship in written language.

# Overview of the Design of the Study

The statistical design of the study was basically a 2X2 factorial with three dependent variables. Analyses of covariance, with grouping by reader level and sex, were the principal statistical procedures used for data evaluation.

The use of children in their second year of formal school instruction was chosen on criteria resulting from a literature search in language acquisition. Specifically, the literature indicated that some second grade children may not have full understanding of certain anaphoric forms. The main sample, 100 children, was randomly drawn from seven different grade two classes of the Edmonton Roman Catholic School System.

The specific choice of children who were in their second year of formal school instruction was relevant in that one of the aims of the study was to examine the relationship between oral language production of anaphora and written language comprehension of the antecedent/ anaphora relationship. A selected subsample of forty-eight children, drawn from the main simple of 100, was chosen to participate in an eligited oral language production task. The selected subsample of mildren are disconsisted into groups of high sells where restricts which are and the oral language production of anaphora was compared with their reading performance on the written language tests especially designed for this study.

#### Definition of Terms

The following terms, important to this study, are defined as follows:

#### Anaphora

2

 $\overline{7}$ 

Anaphora are linguistic structures which refer to, or substitute for, other linguistic structures, commonly called referents or antecedents. In this study pronominal reference was the general anaphoric category investigated. Specifically, the study dealt with three anaphoric categories as they relate to antecedents. They are:

Category	2	Forms	Function
<u>1</u>	'ne,	I, we you she, it, they	To replace or refer to an animate noun or nouns. These forms function as the subject of a sentence,

Example: John walked into the room. He had an apple in his hand.

me, us	To replace or refer to an animato
you him, her, it, them	noun or nouns. These forms function as direct objects, indirect objects, and objects of prepositions.

Example: John walked into the room. Susan gave an apple to him.

	ny, our		To replace or refer to an animate
	your		noun or nouns. These forms function
h	is, her, its,	their	to indicate possession.

Satergery.

Forms

#### Function

Example. John walked into the rest, he had an apple in his hand.

Hote: The above exterior are limited to anyhoric relationships of the the purposes of this study evolves and cat there gave exclosed are lepton. If the event for the terms, the constraint extension and that the entire holds are limited to another muns. If the new subset that the entire holds of referred to by the anothers. Also, it is recognized that indimite onfects the serve is interested of the entire of the enter of the enter

unter adent

This term describes a word, group of words, or topic to which a word occurring later in the sentence or discourse refers to or substitutes for. The terms <u>antecedent</u> and <u>referent</u> were used synonymously in this study. For the purpose of the investigation, the antecedent(s) used consisted only of one or two words (e.g., <u>Sam</u> or <u>Sam and Mary</u>).

Awareness of the Antecedent/Anaphora Relationship

This term refers to the ability of the reader to either use a bemory retrieval process or to visually locate (via a visual regression process) the antecedent for a particular anaphora. In this study, awareuses of the antecedent (anaphora relationship was determined by the purtionance of the reader on the feets of Anaphoric Reference-Close Format (Au-J) and the feets of Anaphoric Reference-Sultiple Thoice Format

<u>lasourse</u>

228-207.

This term refers to a sequence of sentences such that the meaning of the discourse cannot be determined by interpreting each sentence independently. There is an implication in discourse that each string of morie spint have some interpretation conservant with the model of the situation being cullt up by the reader. (Bobrow, 1963)

High Angland Drahmanna

This term learning thenty-four shillers drawn from the main sample of LeO. These children obtained a persentage score of 11.1 or higher in terms of number of anaphora specter on the oral latenage presection task in relation to the total number of words produced on the same task. This value (11.1 per cent) was chosen as an arbitrary out off point in order to dichotomize the total subsample (N forty-eight into two equal groups.

#### High Render Group

This term describes fifty children in the main sample of 100 children who achieved a score of 3.6 or higher on the measure of general reading comprehension (<u>Gates-MacGinitie Reading Tests (1965)</u>, Frinary B). The score of 3.6 on the comprehension section of the <u>Gates-MacGinitie</u> <u>Reading Tests</u> was an arbitrary out-off point used to dichotomize the main sample.

#### Low Spathors Producers

This term describes twenty-four children drawn from the main sample of 100. These children obtained a percentage score of 11.0 or lower in terms of number of anaphora spoken on the oral language production task in relation to the total number of words produced on the same task. This value (11.0) was chosen as an arbitrary cut-off point in order to dichotomize the total subsample (N=forty-eight) into two

#### equal groups.

#### Law don tor Group

If the new loss often fifth billings is the wireless of the second seco

# and well the

The terr proposition refers to a structured sequence of words that expresses an idea. A proposition must contain a finite very, gerund, participle, or infinitive, either implicitly or explicitly stated, along with a subject, either implicitly or explicitly stated. For the purpose of this study a proposition will be operationally defined following the guidelines of Hanf (1972). Certain modifications of the Hanf guidelines were made for this study (See Appendix 1).

#### Sentence

This term refere to a sequence of selected syntactic items combined into a unit in accordance with certain patterns of arrangement, modification and intenation in any given language (Lehmann, 1972). For the purpose of this study a sentence consisted of one or more propositions, one of which contained a finite verb.

## Test of Anaphoric Reference Cloze Format (TAR-C, Form 1)

This is a specially designed test that was used to assess the

audjects' of filty to comprehend the antecedent, support of stionedit. The test was constructed using two interacting antecedents (and two additional class form to serve as distructors), or e-rade as constructed The state of much classes). The scaling of services

The second s

This is a specific costoned test that we mean the second coston of the s

# Lost of stationic reference filting a more format. This is a formal

This is a specially designed that that was used to assess the subjects! Dility to comprehend the antecedent/angher a relationship. It contained two interacting antecedents (and two additional characters to sorve as distractors), one male and one femile. The basic format of the test was a multiple choice procedure.

# Test of Americania Seference-Sulting Foice Format (TASH), formal

This is a specially desirmed that was used to exceed the subjects! willity to comprehend the Artebedent Anaphorn relationship. It contained four interacting proceedents, two densits and two male. The pasts format of the test was a multiple photoe processes.

# Derivation of the Hypotheses

The generation of the hypotheses for this study emurated from the following general questions.

ł,

What are the relative abilities of High and Low Readers in understanding the antecedent/anaphora relationship when the number of antecedents interacting in a discourse are considered?

2. What are the relative abilities of High and Low Readers in understanding the antecedent/anaphora relationship when the effects of distance between antecedent and anaphora are considered?

3. What are the relative abilities of High and Low Readers in - understanding the antecedent/anaphora relationship when the effects of anaphoric category are considered?

4. Will the ability of all readers to comprehend the antecedent/ anaphora relationship be affected by an increase in the number of antecedents interacting throughout a discourse?

5. Will the ability of all readers to comprehend the antecedent/ anaphora relationship be affected by an increase in the distance between antecedent and anaphora?

- 6. Will the ability of all readers to comprehend the antecedent/ anaphora relationship be affected by the anaphoric category?
- 7. What is the relationship between oral language production of anaphora and comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship in written language?
- 8. What is the relationship between intelligence and the reader's ability to comprehend the antecedent/anaphora relationship?

What is the relationship between visual memory span and the reader's ability to comprehend the antecedent/anaphora relationship?

The following null hypotheses were formulated for each of the questions : Question 1.

1.1. There will be no significant difference in the performance of High and Low Readers on the TAR-C and on the TAR-MC regardless of whether the number of antecedents is two rather than four.

Question 2.

1.

2.1. There will be no significant difference in the performance of High and Low Readers on the TAR-C and TAR-MC when the distance between the antecedent and anaphora is 0-2 propositions or 3-5 propositions.

Question 3.

3.1.

There will be no significant difference in the performance of High and Low Readers on the TAR-C and TAR-MC in relation to Category 1 (Nominative case), Category 2 (Objective case), and Category 7 (Genitive case).

Question 4.

4.l.

- There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores when the means of TAR-C, Form 1 (2 antecedents) are compared with TAR-C, Form 2 (4 antecedents).
- 4.2. There will-be no significant difference in the subjects' scores when the means of TAR-MC, Form 1 (2 antecedents) are compared with TAR-MC, Form 2 (4 antecedents).

Question 5.

- 5.1. There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores when the means of the TAR-C, Form 1 (0-2 Propositions) are compared with TAR-C, Form 1 (3-5 Propositions).
- 5.2. There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores when the means of the TAR-C, Form 2 (0-2 Propositions) are compared with TAR-C, Form 2 (3-5 Propositions).
- 5.3. There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores when the means of the TAR-ND, Form 1 (0-2 Propositions) are compared with TAR-NC, Form 1 (3-5 Propositions).
- 5.4. There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores when the means of the TAR-MC, Form 2 (0-2 Propositions) are compared with TAR-MC, Form 2 (3-5 Propositions).

Question 6.

- 6:1. There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores in relation to Category 1 (Nominative case), Category 2 (Objective case), and Category 7 (Genitive case) on the TAR-C, Form 1.
- 6.2. There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores in relation to Category 1 (Nominative case), Category 2 (Objective case), and Category 7 (Genitive case) on the TAR-C, Form 2.
- 6.3. There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores in relation to Category 1 (Nominative case), Category 2 (Objective case), and Category 7 (Genitive case) on the TAR-MC, Form 1.

6.4. There will be no significant difference in the subjects'

scores in relation to Category 1 (Nominative case), Category 2 (Objective case), and Category 7 (Genitive 'case) on the TAR-MC, Form 2.

#### Question 7.

- 7.1. There will be no significant difference between High and Low Readers in their oral language production of anaphora. 👘
- 7.2. There will be no significant difference between High and Low Readers in their oral language production of Category 1, Category 2, and Category 7.
- There will be no significant difference between High 7.3. and Low Readers in their ratio of anaphora to total number of words produced on the oral language task.
- There will be no significant difference in the perform-7.4. ance of the High and Low Anaphora Producers on the TAR-C and TAR-MC.
- Question 8.
  - There will be no significant relationship between 8.1. intelligence, as measured by the Lorge-Thorndike Intelligence Fest, Level 2, Form A, and performance on the TAR-C and TAR-ND.

Question 9. an and an an a second of the second second

9.1.

There will be no significant relationship between visual memory span, as measured by the Detroit Tests of Learning Aptitude. Subtest 16, and performance on the TAR-C and TAR-NO.

Significance of the Study

Syntactic structures in language, through which much information is signalled, are not equally understood by all readers. Many of these - structures have been investigated only in a cursory manner. In addition, a great deal of recent psycholinguistic research has used the "sentence" as the stimulus to be read by the subjects. While the sentence offers certain advantages, both theoretical and practical, as the unit of investigation, many syntactic structures are inter-sentential in nature.

The reading act, as performed by the child in the acquisition process, typically uses connected discourse as the stimulus.

This study was intended to provide information concerning the beginning reader's ability to comprehend one, primarily syntactic phanomenon that can occur across sentence boundaries. The scope of the study included both theoretical and practical aspects.

A significant element of this study was the investigation of several factors that may interfere with the comprehension of the grammatical phenomenon in question, the antecedent/anaphora relationship. These factors were chosen for investigation because they appear to bear a unique relation to the understanding of antecedent and anaphora.

While it is accepted that oral language and the receptive act of reading are related, the exact nature of this relationship is still largely unexplored. This study is considered important in that it attempts to establish directly the relationship between oral language production of a given grammatical element and the understanding of that element in written language.

# Delimitations and Limitations of the Study

The following delimitations were placed on the study: In respect to the area under investigation which was substitution, only personal pronouns which were anaphoric in nature were selected for study.

2. In respect to possible factors that may interfere with comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship, only the following were chosen for study:

a. The effects of multiple antecedents in a discourse.

b. The effects of distance between antecedent and anaphora.

c. The effects of a phoric category.

The following limitations are inherent in the study and should be taken into account when the generalization of the findings is considered:

> The subjects who composed the sample were from one grade level (grade two). Also, these children were urban students' drawn from one school system in a large, Western Canadian city.

2. The subjects were screened so that a score of at least 2.0 had to be obtained on a measure of general reading ability. Moreover, all subjects had to demonstrate a high degree of word identification ability on a test composed of all the words that occurred on the TAR.

3. The oral language protocols obtained may not be truly representative of the total language of the child. Situational variables are known to influence elicited oral language production.

Certain limitations, which became apparent during the study, are noted in Chapter 8.

#### CHAPTER 2

#### REVIEW OF RELATED LITERATURE: A THEORY OF READING

This chapter discusses certain theories and models of reading in order to provide a theoretical basis for the study. Particular focus will be on the influence of syntactic factors on the beginning reader's comprehension of written language and particularly on substitution with which this study is especially concerned. The focus is on a theory of beginning reading since the sample consisted of children in their second year of school and who may be considered to be in the acquisition stage of the reading process.

#### Theories and Models of Reading

Two recent books have contributed to the increase in knowledge about the processes of reading. <u>Theoretical Models and Processes of</u> <u>Reading</u>, Singer and Ruddell (eds.), and <u>The Literature of Research in</u> <u>Reading with Emphasis on Models</u>, F. B. Davis (ed.), present the theoretical positions of a number of researchers. Although many of the models are incomplete and focus on selected processes, the reading researcher is now better equipped to place his work in a given theoretical context.

• The use of models is not without its critics. Kingston (1963, 1970, 1971) is quite critical of the current reading models. He states, "...few, if any, of the current reading models lend themselves to empirical verification or can be used to predict reading behavior (p. 8-61, 1971)."

Kingston is correct in pointing out that the models presented

often reflect the special interest or background of the researcher. He commented, "Language acquisition and utilization models, psycholinguistic models, information-theory models, perceptual models, learning models represent disjunctive categories (p. 8-62, 1971)." This writer contends there is a special need for specialists in reading to integrate the knowledge of related disciplines into a specialized model of reading.

ŧ

Jenkinson (1972), in addition to describing various needed aspects of a viable model of reading, focuses upon an often neglected dimension--the developing reader. From her observations concerning the developing reader and the special characteristics he demonstrates, Jenkinson feels that better progress would be made "...if we do not attempt to account, at least in the same model, for both the developing and the mature reader (p. 105)."

Wiener and Cromer (1967), in viewing the reading process, make an important distinction between the beginning and mature reader. This distinction is articulated as follows:

> The failure to distinguish between acquisition and accomplished reading in definitions partially accounts for the confusion about the relationship between identification and comprehension. In the acquisition of reading skill, identification may be a necessary antecedent to comprehension... But identification, which is essential in the acquisition phase for comprehansion, may be irrelevant for the skilled reader who already has meaning associated with the visual forms and who may go directly from the written forms to the meaning without identification: that is, without an intermediary "verbal-auditory" transformation. (p. 623)

Researchers differ in their description of the reading process. Based mainly on the works of Wiener and Cromer (1967), Neisser (1967), Goodman (1970, 1968, 1965), and F. Smith (1971), the following phases of direct interaction with visual input have been selected as representing major facets of the reading process. Psychological processes

such as memory, association, analysis, etc. are assumed to take place within these phases.

#### Discrimination

Although Wiener and Cromer correctly presuppose discrimination when they speak of identification this is not to imply that it is of small consequence, especially to the beginning reader. It would appear that the beginning reader is quite involved in discriminating the various letters in a word. That is, he must be able to immediately distinguish one letter from another and one sequence of letters from another sequence.

Neisser (1967) has examined two of the existing theories that explain identification, and specifically discrimination. Template matching, a theory that contends a letter would be recognized by comparing and noting compatibility with a stored model, is rejected by Neisser on both empirical and common sense grounds. The common sense view holds that letters are recognizable in a variety of positions, orientations, and styles. The theory is likewise refuted by a vast array of empirical evidence, much of it conducted by Neisser and his associates (Neisser, 1953(a)(b); Neisser and Weene, 1960; Selfridge and Neisser, 1960).

Feature analysis is offered as a viable alternative to the template matching theory. The basis of this notion is that each letter is distinguished by a set of distinctive features that would discriminate one particular letter from the other letters of the alphabet. Although Neisser recognized the potential of the feature analysis theory he did not attempt to specify the distinctive features of the letters.

Gibson and her associates at Cornell University have focused a great deal of attention on identifying both the existence of distinctive features and their nature (Gibson, 1965; Gibson, Pick, and Osser. 1952; Pick, 1955). While the findings do not indicate precisely the exact composition of the distinctive features for each letter, Gibson and her co-workers have laid a firm research base for their existence.

F. Smith, following Neisser (1967) and Gibson (1965), has adopted the position that distinctive features play a crucial role in letter identification. This assumption is carried a step further by applying many of the basic tenets of feature analysis to word identification (fmith and Holmes, 1971). Smith notes that the feature analytic system uses redundancy. Redundancy exists when information is available from more than one source (see Lott and Gronnell, 1969). By introducing this idea, Smith extended the basic work of Neisser and Bibson. The redundancy concept is compatible with another of Smith's notions concerning the reading process-the reduction of uncertainty. The main types of redundancy used in discrimination are featural and orthographic. The former refers to the distinctive characteristics of lettérs while the latter refers to the expected sequence of letters.

# Word Identification

F. Smith (1971) has discussed three prevalent theories concerning word recognition which are whole-word identification, letterby-letter identification, and identification by letter clusters. Recognizing that each of the theories appears to offer a plausible explanation for the process of word recognition, Smith exposed certain deficiencies in each. In summary, he commented as follows:

> Each approach...has inadequacies that are partly met by an opposing view, which would suggest that they are not mutually exclusive, and that no one of them has
any real claim to be the closest representation of the truth (p, 1.27).

As an alternative to the three theories limith forwarded an extension of the feature analytic theory in which the word distinguished was assigned to a category and identified or given a name. This identification or recognition could be immediate or mediated depending on the individual's previous familiarity with a word.

## Comprehension: Semintic and Syntactic Gues

Comprehension is, perhaps, the most elusive part of the reading process since there are very few observable behaviors as to the degree and nature of the comprehension taking place. Today, many researchers agree that the reader's knowledge of the language (particularly his use of semantic and syntactic cues) plays an important part in his understanding of what is read (Goodman, 1970; Hochberg, 1970a,b,c; Levin and Kaplan, 1970).

Although the basic idea that the reader uses both semantic and syntactic cuss is not entirely new (cf. Huey, 1908), recent research has focused extensively on this area. Results from research tend to indicate that both mature and beginning readers make use of such cues. Many questions remain to be answered as to how mature and beginning readers differ in their use of semantic and syntactic cues. An equally important question is how high and low reading achievers (at any level) differ in using these cues.

Those researchers who hold an information processing viewpoint of reading tend to emphasize the importance of using semantic and syntactic cues. For example, Goodman<sup>O</sup> (1970) views reading as an active information processing activity with both semantic and syntactic cues

playing a vital role in the reading process. Goodman's (1970) state  $\frac{1}{2}$  mont as to the nature of the reading process is as follows:

> heading is a selective process. It involves partial use of available minimal language cues selected from perceptual input on the basis of the reader's expectation. As this partial information is processed, tentative decisions are made to be confirmed, rejected, or refined as reading progresses. (p. 260)

This statement advocates the use of both semantic and syntactic cues. An earlier comment by Goodman (1965) was more direct in relating the invertance of syntax. He wrote:

> Most words have lexical (or dictionary) meaning. However, it is the devices which signal the <u>structural</u> meaning that makes communication intelligible. (p. 291)

Although dealing basically with the mature reader, Neisser (1969, 1967) has contributed to the general theory that views the reader as an active hypothesizer (see also Levin and Kaplan, 1970). His analysis-by-synthesis proposal suggests that the reader is an active hypothesis tester who uses his linguistic knowledge to build a model of the print. This is an on-going process and the reader's hypotheses are continually being confirmed, denied, or revised.

Much of the work by Hochberg (1970a,b,c) supports the general theory of Neisser. Both researchers are vitally concerned with the role of pre-attentive processes. Hochberg cites evidence to the extent that, since the fores, the center of the eye, picks up only fine detail, the peripheral vision, along with the reader's expectations, guides the reading over the page (cf. Neisser, 1959). The fixations are guided by the reader's general linguistic knowledge. This is referred to as the "cognitive search guidance" (Hochberg and Brooks, 1970).

Smith (1971) distinguishes the importance of syntax to the beginning and fluent reader as follows:

The more difficulty a reader has with reading, the more he relies on the visual information; this statement applies to both the fluent and the bestmer. In each cise, the cause of the difficulty is inibility to make full use of syntactic and semantic redundancy, of nonvisual sources of information. (p. ddf)

Lator, Smith remarks:

Syntax is a tool that the fluent reader uses to predict whit the surface representation should be, and he needs only a minimum of cues to provide a confirmation of that prediction—provided he is able to make use of regundancy accurately.  $(p, z^{1})$ 

In any investigation concerning Language, it is useful a refer to Schlesinger's (1969, 1956) proposal that complete separation of semantics and syntax is practically impossible. This conclusion arose from his work, mainly with rature readers, concerning the relation of the eye-voice-span (EVS) to phrase units. His experiment requires the subjects to report all the words they could remember once the text was removed. Results from the study showed that the readers typically pronounced words to both syntactic and semantic boundaries. Schlesinger contended that the distance the eyes are ahead of the voice (while reading aloud) represents a decoding unit.

Replicating part of the Schlesinger (1969) study, Levin and Kaplan (1970) found similar results with subjects from several age groups (grade two through adults). Their findings confirmed that the EVS tended to extend to a phrase boundary. It was also noted in that particular study the tendency was not related to the age of the reader except for the grade two pupils. Unfortunately, the special characteristics of the second grade children were not discussed.

## Studies of Semantics

Reading educators have long recognized the importance of the

normatic element in comprehension. The dominance of word knowledge in comprehension is well documented in the literature (Bale, Bazik, and Petty, 1973; Dale and Reichart, 1957). Contributing to our knowledge of the accountic element in comprehension are the factor analytic studies (Davis, 1953, 1944; Alaban, 1954; Langman, 1941) and the readability investigations (Yorkum, 1948; Gray and Leary, 1935; Dale and Tyler, 1934).

Substitution forms, the grammatical phenomena being examined in this study, to not convey a great deal of securitic information Typically, one can only escentain such basic features as number and gender in a substitution form. It was assumed in this study that the semantic information contained in a substitution form would not cause the reader difficulty. The topic under investigation was the relationship between substitution forms (anaphora) and their antecedents.

#### Studies of Syntax

The syntactic element in language has come into increasing importance in the past few years. Much of this interest arose with the emergence of the transformational-generative grammars. Some of the aspects investigated tend to show that the syntactic element is of vital importance in comprehension (see Hamilton and Deese, 1970).

In an early study of syntax, Gibbons (1941), though using a small sample of third crade on telestmined there was a high relationship between underst using sentences and children's ability to see relationships between parts of a sentence (r = .89). Also, she noted a correlation of .72 between the ability to see relationships among parts of a sentence and total reading ability.

O'Donnell (1963), using a sample of high school students,

ň,

examined the relationship between grammatical knowledge and reading comprehension. After statistically deleting the effect of vicabulary, Offennell noted two trends. First, he observed a low, positive relationship between reading comprehension and knowledge of English at moture as measured by his instrument. Gecond, he noted a high, negative derre lation between reading comprehension and knowledge of traditional inglish. grammar. Dince the statistical relationships were low, effectual inglish, grammar. Dince the statistical relationships were low, effectual did not argue for teaching formed grammatical structure in ender to also reading comprehension. Although the general finding of the formall investigation are important, it must be remembared that he used cature readers in his simple and results may not be applicable to subsci unitariain earlier grades.

An important study by Nurss (1957) attempted to intermine shether syntactic structure contributed to comprehension difficulty in realiza-The results of her investigation are relevant to this study since the sample consisted of 106 second grade pupils. Notable conclusions are as follows:

> Vocabulary contributes the "largest amount to the variability in reading difficulty at the beginning bedding level. Syntactic structure affected reading difficulty when measured by oral reading error; but did not have a measurable effect when comprehension was measured by a picture comprehension test. (p. 87)

Nurse realized that the nature of her comprehension task was not totally satisfactory. Her "stories" consisted of only one sentence each (there were thirty-six in all) and comprehension was measured by the children pointing to the picture (there were three choices) that correctly depicted the "story". As Nurse stated, "Syntactic structure, undoubtably, plays a larger role in determining comprehension difficulty of passages than it does in determining comprehension difficulty of sentences (p. 68)." The preceding studies have focused basically on the general problem of syntax and its relation to reading comprehension. Other studies have examined more specific syntactical elements of language. Although most readability formulas emphasize word counts, many have used some form of syntactic measurement, namely, sentence length (Spache, 1953; Flesch, 1943; Gray and Leary, 1935). Recently, MacGinitie and Tretiak (1969) have demonstrated that mean sentence length is a factor in readability.

Robertson (1966) showed that connectives, considered by many researchers to be merely structure words, could cause comprehension problems for some children. Using a sample of fourth, fifth, and sixth graders, she obtained significant correlations between understanding of connectives, as measured by a specially designed test, and sex, mental age, and abilities in listening, reading, and written language. Support is found in her study for Ruddell's (1965) conclusion that high frequency oral language patterns are easier to read than oral language patterns of low frequency. Robertson commented, "The investigation indicated that the language features of the printed page which are rare in children's oral language may be those which often characterize the most difficult text for children to read (p. v)."

Various researchers have examined the role ambiguity plays in oral language comprehension (Carey, Mehler, and Bever, 1970; Mackay and Bever, 1967) but Little (1972) and Chai (1967) investigated the problem in a reading context. While the focus of the Little study, conducted with a sample of elementary school children, was to examine the concept of ambiguity as a whole, certain sentences contained substitute forms that contributed to this ambiguity. These sentences were assigned dif-

 $O_{10}$ 

ficulty radings by Little (as were all sentences). The results showed a wide range of difficulty attributed to these sentences suggesting that substitute forms alone do not appreciably affect the comprehension of a sentence.

A study devised by Chai (1967) used pronouns with ambiguous antecedents. The sample consisted of adults, eighth, seventh, and fifth grade students. The purpose of the investigation was to discover "...the parameters that allow the resolution of an ambiguous pronominal referent ... (p. 3)." Chai found that while the eighth graders (and above) could normally resolve the ambiguities by choosing the appropriate referent, the fifth graders were generally unable to accomplish this task.

As stated previously, transformational-generative grammar has contributed a new dimension to language studies. Early investigations typically used oral language as the communication vehicle and focused on showing that the number of transformations was a factor in speed of comprehension (Epstein, 1967; Gough, 1965; Miller, 1962). Recent research has largely contradicted this early contention (Watt, 1970; Wearing, 1970; Greenough and Semmel, 1969).

Fagan (1969) was the first researcher to examine extensively the role of transformations in reading comprehension at the elementary school level. By use of the "cloze" procedure and specially constructed passages that had been analyzed for the various transformations used in the sentences, Fagan obtained significant correlations between these transformations and sex, grade, reading achievement, mental ability, and socio-economic status. Certain types of transformations, mainly embeddings and deletions, were found to correlate more highly with a difficult sentence or passage than transformations of other types. In

relation to the controversy concerning derivational complexity, Fagan offered the following analysis from his study:

Although this study was not designed to test the validity of the Derivational Theory of Complexity, findings showed that the number of transformations per sentence did not influence the difficulty of a sentence or passage. When the number of steps or subrules within a transformation was considered, however, the results were, at most controversial. (p. vi.)

Fagan compiled a list of the fifteen easiest and fifteen most difficult transformations for the three grades (fourth, fifth, and sixth) studied. The simple pronoun transformation (he, she, they, etc.) was found to be the fourth easiest transformation, however, the genitive pronoun transformation (his, her, their, etc.) ranked eighth most difficult among the fifteen. This suggests that one cannot make generalized statements about the difficulty of substitution forms independently of their functions.

Three comprehension studies (Lesgold, 1974; Bormuth, Manning, Carr, and Pearson, 1970; Jenkinson, 1957) specifically explored the reader's comprehension of substitute forms. Jenkinson's (1957) study, which dealt with the types of clues high school students use in performing cloze tests, examined substitution in a peripheral manner. Jenkinson was interested in all types of clues, however, she indicated that accurate location of referents was one of the syntactic clues used by her subjects.

The Bormuth et al. (1970) investigation was specific in studying substitution forms. A major focus of this research was to investigate children's understanding of anaphoric relationships. Anaphoric relationships occur when a substitute form is used in place of, or refers to a word, group of words, sentence, or topic. The term 'antecedent' is usually applied to the word, group of words, sentence, or topic that the anaphora replaces or refers to. Fourteen anaphoric structures were used in this investigation which included 240 fourth grade students. The structures were ranked according to the percentage of subjects correctly answering questions that tested each anaphoric relationship. Personal pronouns ranked as the least comprehended category with only 64.5 per cent of the students correctly responding.

The difficulty ordering of the Bormuth et al. (1970) study, ospecially personal pronouns, was recently challenged by Lesgold (1974). Lesgold's main contention focused on the lack of semantic control in the earlier investigation. Replicating part of the Bormuth et al. work, with a total sample of eighty children from the third and fourth grades, Lesgold used fourteen anaphoric structures, nine of which were identical to those used in the Bormuth et al. study. Of interest to this study was the finding of 91.7 per cent comprehension for the personal pronoun category. This high level of comprehension is greatly different from the finding of Bormuth et al. Lesgold contends that the explanation for this difference lies in uncontrolled semantic factors (in the Bormuth et al. work).

In order to arrive at a valid interpretation of the investigations reviewed one must observe the unit of communication used in a given study. Many of the studies adopted the sentence as the unit to be read or orally comprehended by the subjects. In addition to the rise in popularity of transformational-generative grammars, which obviously has contributed to the use of the sentence, the sentence appears to offer other advantages. Latham (1973) reasoned that the gentence, "...seemed to exhibit a kind of closure which allows it to be investi-

gated in relative, if not complete independence (p. 43)."

Most reading material, however, is not presented in single, isolated sentences but in a text of at least several sentences structured around a topic. Thus, research which relies on the sentence as the main unit of language may be limited in its application to children performance as they read material longer than the sentence--usually termed "discourse".

Carroll's (1971) insightful critique of studies of semantics and syntax also has implications for the use of the sentence as the unit of language for analysis. Carroll's criticisms of research on semantics and syntax are:

- a. Typically, the subjects are normal, reasonably well educated native speakers of English.
- b. Typically, the sentences presented to the subjects are quite ordinary sentences using high- and mediumfrequency words; they are presented as self-contained, isolated sentences; if a number are presented, they are unrelated in content.
- c. Sentences are ordinarily presented in the absence of any context with which they might otherwise be accompanied.
- d. Sentences are presented for immediate understanding or immediate recall, only very rarely for recognition or recall after a considerable time period.
- e. Motivation of subjects is typically high, at the level one would expect in an experiment where subjects are paid volunteers who are alert and eager to please the experimenter. (pp. 47-48)

It is the writer's contention that the child's behavior in reading a sentence may differ from his behavior in reading a paragraph or longer unit (i.e., discourse). Transformational-generative grammar has used the sentence as its unit of analysis. No viable theory of discourse has yet been forwarded. However, available information concerning discourse is given in the next section.

#### Characteristics of Discourse

Many of the skills-focused definitions of reading implied elements of discourse without ever formalizing them. For example, the skills of "organizing ideas" (Betts, 1956), "finding and understanding thought relationships" (Niles, 1963), and "drawing conclusions" (Noise, 1948) suggest elements of discourse. The parameters of discourse, however, were not defined.

Most of the recent work in discourse analysis has come from structural linguistics, mainly from the study of tagmemics (Becker, 1965; Pike, 1964). Additional analysis has been forwarded by Christensen (1965) and Hasan (1968). Koen, Becker, and Young (1969) have argued that the paragraph possesses a psychological reality. Following the work of Becker (1965), the investigators proposed that written discourse contains three operating systems which are composed of lexical, grammatical, and rhetorical elements. The lexical system is characterized by "lexical equivalence chains" which employ such devices as word repetition, synonomity, metaphor, paraphrasing, and <u>relative and personal pronouns</u>. The grammatical system is characterized by patterns of formal markers (e.g., the continuation of a plural subject or predicate). The rhetorical system "...consists of patterns or "sequences of functional slots, each of which may be filled by one or more sentences (p. 491)." (see also, Christensen, 1965)

Hasan (1968) discussed the elements that contribute to cohesion in written discourse. She feels that cohesive ties may be grammatical, lexical, or phonological. Lexical cohesion is seen in the use of nearsynonyms while phonological cohesion is evidenced in poetry. Grammatical categories of cohesion include reference, substitution, ellipsis, and conjunction.

Wardhaugh (1969) feels that such elements as pronominal sequences, tense and aspect change, sequencing words (<u>first</u>, <u>then</u>, <u>how</u>-<u>ever</u>), deictics (<u>this</u>, <u>that</u>), and determiners (<u>a</u>, <u>the</u>) all contribute to the cohesion of verbal discourse.

Topicality, the organization of a passage around a theme, has been proposed by Mosberg and Shima (1969) as a characteristic of discourse. They further define topicality as how tightly a passage is structured around the subject matter. Anaphora analysis is proposed by Mosberg and Shima as one method of measuring topicality. The authors speculated that as the distance between the anaphora and original concept increase, the structuring around the concept word would be more difficult. The notion of distance between anaphora and antecedent was tested in this study.

Although many schemes for analyzing language have used sentencebased units (e.g., the T-unit (Hunt, 1965)), a recent study by Hanf (1972) was based on a scheme for segmenting language into "cognitive units". This analytical scheme was devised to examine discourse units in language.

A Theory of Reading

The reading process consists of psychological, physiological, and linguistic variables. Although the total reading process must be described in an interdisciplinary manner, the focus of this study, awareness of the antecedent/anaphora relationship, relates primarily to psycholinguistic aspects. Although one attempts to study a certain aspect of the reading process in some isolation, other variables are undoubtably interacting.

Those phases of the reading process against which it is necessary to understand substitution are those previously reviewed, that is, discrimination, identification, and comprehension (including both semantic and syntactic factors). Goodman's (1970, 1968) models of reading may be used to describe both the oral and silent reading performance of the beginning reader and provide a framework for this study.

Since the reading of the present study was silent in nature the focus will be on Goodman's model of silent reading. This model is reproduced in Figure 2.1.

## FIGURE 2.1

AN ADAPTION OF GOODMAN'S 1970 HODEL

TO ILLUSTRATE EARLY SILENT READING

Aural Input

decode

Meaning

Graphic

Input

recode

The model depicted in Figure 2.1 suggests that the reader must first recode the graphic input to aural input, and then decode the meaning as he would aural language input in listening. Goodman, however, does not adequately explain what happens in the recoding and decoding stages. The writer believes that in order for reading to result in meaning at the end of decoding, the reader must discriminate the graphic features, identify words, and use the semantic and syntactic cues of his language. The writer is assuming that the subjects of this study possessed adequate discrimination skills and consequently these were not tested. Word identification ability was assessed by means of a specially designed test (see Chapter 5). The use of memantic and syntactic cues was the focus of the study. Here specifically, the study investigated how the beginning reader understands the antecedent/anaphora relationship in written discourse. Since the antecedent/anaphora relationship represents a dualism, the investigator proposed to examine both facets. Thus, in one specially designed instrument, the subjects were required to supply the substitute form while the subjects had to identify the antecedent in the second instrument (see Chapter 5 for a description of these instruments).

There is a great deal of speculation, supported with some evidence, that certain aspects of oral language are related to similar aspects in written language. For example, Ruddell (1963) believes that oral language patterns which are most common in the child's language are the ones most easily comprehended in written language. The aspect of the oral/written language debate examined in this study is the relationship between oral language production of certain anaphora and the comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship in written language.

The next two chapters will review the literature on (a) substitution forms as an aspect of language and as a possible factor relating to reading comprehension, and (b) oral language development as it relates to reading.

#### CHAPTER 3

# RELATED LITERATURE: LINGUISTIC SUBSTITUTION AND FRONOMINAL REFERENCE

The previous chapter reviewed studies which have indicated a number of grammatical elements which influence reading comprehension. One of these elements is pronominal reference which is a form of substitution. Since it was the purpose of this study to investigate this facet in more detail as it relates to language and to reading comprehension, a review of the literature concerning substitution as an aspect of language is necessary.

Since reading is a language based activity it is reasonable to determine how linguists have treated the particular facet of language being investigated, in this instance, substitution. Specifically, one would wish to determine how substitution has been defined, what forms are ettributed to it, and how it functions in the general schema of language as a whole.

There is no agreement among linguists as to the meaning of the term substitution. Early linguists did not normally use the term. Instead, they classified most substitute forms under the heading of pronouns. Later, more refined terminology was used, but in a manner that is often confusing to the reader. For axample, Blocmfield (1933) treated substitution as a general phenomenon and included anaphora as a subcategory, while Hasan (1968) felt that substitution was merely one type of construction that contributes to grammatical cohesion.

Linguists have attempted to describe substitutes by form and function. This review will consider some of the major attempts in this

endeavor. H. B. Allen (1964) presented four major movements in the study of English grammar. These movements are identified as "traditional", "historical", "descriptive", and "generative". One must remember that although these movements are somewhat commarable to chronological periods, there is a great deal of overlapping. Also, certain linguists, who would normally be placed in one category, tend to espouse ideas that fit into other categories. An example of this is 2. Harris, who would be classified in the Allen outline as "descriptive", yet, many of his ideas concerning grammar writing greatly influenced the generative movement.

Allen's movement periods will be used as a framework for discussion. Although the system devised by Allen does have limitations, such as those noted above, it does present a method for grouping certain linguists whose ideas of grammar tend to have certain similarities. Major figures within each movement will be discussed and the focus will be on the individual's method of describing substitution with special amphasis on definition, form, and function. Certain works are more relevant to this review than others and no attempt will be made to treat all movements equally.

#### Traditional Grammar

Although this period extended from the earliest English grammars through the eighteenth century, there were certain characteristics which typified the era. Grammarians attempted to use the formulations of Latin grammars in describing English. Also, the grammars tended to be prescriptive in nature and assumed a static or ideal language. Typically, normal changes that languages tend to undergo were simply ignored.

In spite of the detractions in the methods of these early scholars, certain of their ideas are consistent with current linguistic thought. First, the grammarians did not besitate to appeal to semantics in their formulations. Second, as Thomas (1963) notes, "the traditionalists intuitively perceive an organic relationship between certain kinds of constructions...(p. 7)."

Priestly, Ward, and Murray. Representative of the grammarians of the traditional era are Joseph Priestly, William Ward, and Lindley Murray. Joseph Priestly's work, <u>Rudiments of English Grammar</u> (1761), was one of the early comprehensive grammars. Hartung (1956) considers this grammar of importance because Priestly took into account general usage in his descriptions of language. This was in spite of the fact that prescriptive grammars were prevalent during this time.

A comprehensive survey of grammar entitled <u>An Essay on Grammar</u> (1765) by William Ward was considered by Nist (1966) to be the first complete handbook of grammar in English. Much of the book was devoted to the correct use of grammatical forms (e.g., the correct use of <u>lie</u> and <u>lay</u> was thoroughly discussed).

A third major work of the traditional period was Lindley Murray's book <u>English Grammar</u> (1795). This treatment of grammar showed little change from the work of previous scholars but the <u>Grammar</u> was the most popular and frequently printed during the nineteenth century so it is worth considering.

The traditionalists' definition of pronouns was narrow in that they typically described their substituting only for a noun or substantive. Priestly (1761) wrote, "Pronouns are words that are used as substitutes for nouns, to prevent the too frequent and tiresome repetition

of them...(p. 8)." The notion of "avoiding repetition", which might be considered a philoso, hical "Why" of pronouns, was typical of the linguiets of this and earlier eras (Michael, 1970). Although somewhat more elaborate, the definitions of Ward and Murray did not differ greatly from that of iriestly.

In describing pronouns Murray used six classes while Ward noted five and Friestly only four. When possible, all the grammarians used a latin model for declining the pronouns. The adherence to the latin model, which used case structure, produced some unusual listings of English pronouns (e.g., Priestly's personal pronouns contains the vocative case with the form <u>O me</u>). The notion of case structure for personal pronouns, however, is used by modern structural linguists in their descriptions of English. Also, several recent psycholinguistic experiments have been conducted where the dependent variable was the subjects' ability to comprehend, imitate, or produce pronouns whose only distinguishing feature was case (e.g., Eatch, 1970: Chai, 1967).

Lindley Nurray's description of English substitutes contained the largest number of classes. They were: personal, possessive, relative, interrogative, definite, and distributive. The latter two classes were considered by neither Friestly nor Ward. As with Friestly and Ward, Murray devised elaborate form classes although he did tend to describe the grammatical function of a form if it occurred in more than one class. For example, the form <u>his</u> was included in both personal and possessive pronoun classes. For the form <u>his</u> to qualify as a possessive, it had to be prefixed to a substantive (e.g., <u>his book</u>). If the form stood alone it was categorized as a personal pronoun-possessive case (e.g., <u>The book is his</u>.). This type of classification was typical of

36

an early effort to obtain functional distinctions of pronouns. Thus, as was typical of the era, similar forms were distinguished by function. In summary the definitions these grammarians formulated for pronouns were narrow in scope in that they focused only on the replacement of a noun or sucstantive. Generally they were concerned with elaborate form classes and devoted scant attention to the important problem of function. Notable insights into the functions of pronouns were often buried in footnotes (e.g., the observation that the referent could follow the pronoun). This was probably due to the fact that the phenomenon could not be explained in the existing framework and the grasmarian did not wish to complicate his classification system with exceptions.

## Historical Grammare

The historical grammarians based their analyses of language on the diachronic aspects of the target language and related foreign languages. By chronicling the historical changes that languages undergo they attempted to account for certain irregularities that occur, as well as discovering possible reasons for these irregularities. The idea of language families was developed during this period and many of the similarities that relate certain languages were described. The rigid prescriptive grammars were basically abandoned and more attention was given to the language as it was actually used by the speakers. Needless to say, there was no distinct break between the traditional and historical periods and many of the ideas of the former were evident in the grammars of the latter period.

Sweet. Henry Sweet's work, <u>A New English Grammar, Logical and</u> Historical (1891), was typical of the grammars of the period. Sweet's analyses show that he was aware of the elusive nature of pronouns. A large number of divisions and sub-divisions were used in an attempt to refine his classification scheme of substitute forms.

Sweet posited three notions concerning the general characteristics of pronouns that are important. First, he noted that pronouns carried little or no independent information and relied mainly on their referent for meaning. Second, a pronoun could substitute for both single nouns or groups of nouns. The notion that pronouns could substitute for more than a single noun was an advancement over the ideas of the earlier grammarians. Finally, Sweet noted the grammatical phenomenon of postcedents and gave examples of how they functioned (cf., Ward, 1765, who alluded to the existence of postcedents but did not describe them).

Jespersen. Otto Jespersen, the Danish linguist, is considered a dominant figure in the historical era as described by Allen. His major work, <u>A Modern English Grammar on Historical Principles</u> (1914) and the more concise, <u>Essentials of English Grammar</u> (1933) contain valuable treatments of pronouns. Jespersen followed earlier definitions of substitutes by stating they replaced or referred to another word or words in a sentence.

The standard treatment of pronouns at that time was not completely satisfying to Jespersen. An alternative classification scheme • was devised based on expanded form classes. Jespersen felt that the grammarian could better close the gap between form and function with these expanded classes. Sweet had noted earlier there was a great amount of cross-classification involved in pronouns. Jespersen, with his axtended form classes, was better able to avoid this overlap and to discuss the function in terms of its form class members. These classes,

and an example of each, are as follows:

- A. Pronouns of definite indications:
  - 1. Pronouns of contextual indication. (Personal pronouns)
  - 2. Pronouns of pointing. (This, that, yonder, thus, so)
  - 3. The definite article. (The)
  - 4. The pronoun of identity. (Same)
  - 5. The pronoun of similarity. (Such)
  - 6. The pronouns of complexity. (Relative pronouns)
- B. Pronouns of indefinite indication:
  - 1. The pronoun of indefinite unity. (One)
  - 2. The indefinite article. (An, a)
    - 3. The pronoun of difference. (Other)
  - 4. The pronoun of discretion. (Certain)
  - 5. The pronoun of unspecified quantity. (Some)
  - 6. The pronouns of indifference. (Any, either)
  - 7. Indefinite pronouns requesting a solution (Interroga
    - tive pronouns)
- C. Pronouns of totality:
  - 1. Positive. (<u>All, both, every, each</u>)
  - 2. Negative. (No, none, neither)

As previously mentioned, Jespersen extended his observations beyond that of the pronoun serving only a referential or substitute function. He noted that in a construction with <u>do so</u>, a verb that was previously mentioned was replaced or referred to. Jespersen only made passing comment to this construction and did not develop the idea, however, this observation represented a step in enlarging the domain of substitute forms in general. The grammarians of the historical period expanded the definition of substitutes that had been formulated by the scholars of the traditional era. This expansion focused on the fact that a substitute could refer to or substitute for units of language larger than the word. In addition, the traditional form classes were greatly expanded. This enabled these linguists to better account for the functions of the various form classes. In the descriptions of these grammarians greater stress was placed on a more functional account of language, objectally in terms of substitutes.

## Descriptive or Structural Grammars

Although this period is dominated by the work of Bloomfield (1933), it is necessary to mention the contributions of two other outstanding linguists to the era. These linguists, Sapir and Boaz, did not produce specific grammars of English that could be referred to for their descriptions of substitutes, although many of their general insights into language preceded the more famous work of Bloomfield. It appears that the general contributions of Sapir (1921), along with those of his mentor, Boaz, laid the groundwork for the period described here as the structural era.

<u>Bloomfield</u>. Leonard Bloomfield, whose major, work <u>Language</u> (1933) is considered a classic, attempted to introduce more scientific rigor into the study of language. Bloomfield denied the mental processes as a valid part of linguistic inquiry and only attempted to study observable data. The goal of the structural linguist thus became completely involved with describing the language as it existed.

The general term "substitution" was used by Bloomfield to

describe what most linguists had previously defined as pronouns or pronominals. A substitute was defined as "...a linguistic form or grammatical feature which, under certain conventional circumstances, replaces any one of a class of linguistic items (p. 247)." Bloomfield felt that each substitute held to a grammatically definable domain.

Substitution was delineated by the introduction when term "anaphora". Anaphora was defined as follows:

To a large extent, some substitution-types are characterized further, by the circumstances that the form for which substitution is made, has occurred in recent speech. Thus, when we say "Ask the policeman, and he will tell you" that substantive "he" means, among other things, that the singular male substantive expression which is replaced by "he", has been recently uttered. A substitute which implies this, is an "anaphoric" or "dependent" substitute, and the recentlyuttered replaced form is the antecedent. (p. 249)

Bloomfield, as with the earlier linguists Boaz and Sapir, did not emphasize large form classes. Substitution was considered to be a grammatical arrangement and thus, defined by function. He did note some of the usual form attributes of substitutes, e.g., their inflected nature, their being short words, etc.. Of greater interest are some of his insights into the nature of anaphora. For example, Bloomfield noted the existence of the so-called "zero-anaphora" where a noun is deleted (e.g., <u>I like fresh milk better than sour</u>).

The basic notion of verbal substitutes as first noted by Jespersen was expanded. In addition to the now accepted <u>do</u> form Bloomfield included <u>have</u>, <u>will</u>, <u>shall</u>, <u>can</u>, <u>must</u>, and <u>may</u> as verbal substitutes.

Other Structural Linguists. The work of Hockett (1958), Fries (1952), Hill (1958), and R. Allen (1961) further increased understanding of the function of substitute forms. Some notable insights by these linguists into the function of substitutes are: (a) the notion that the referent of a substitute may be extralinguistic (Hockett, 1958), and (b) that pronouns may replace nominal constructions not merely nouns (Allen, 1961).

Harris. In Z. Harris one discovers a figure similar to Boaz and Sapir. The similarity lies not in their linguistic tenets but in the fact that all served as transcenders of two eras. Just as the insights of Boaz and Sapir laid the groundwork for the structuralists, Harris served as the forerunner of the transformation sits. Prideaux (1971) noted the lack of credit given to Harris by many transformationalists, in spite of the fact that many of his formulations and observations served as a foundation for later work (e.g., the idea of transformations and kernel sentences are but two of his conceptions).

Harris attempted to devise a more formal method of describing language. The prime vehicles used by Harris were "co-occurrence" and "transformations". The formal definition of co-occurrence was posited as follows:

For classes K, L in a construction c, the K co-occurrence of a particular member  $L_1$  of L is the set of members of K which occur with  $L_1$  in c. (p. 392)

Harris posited the idea of the pro-form in his work, a term that has been adopted by the transformationalists. Included under the aegis of this term were: pronouns, <u>wh</u>-pro forms (<u>who, which, what</u>, etc.), pro-V forms (<u>do</u>, <u>can</u>, <u>will</u>, etc.), pro-A (<u>his</u>, <u>that</u>), pro-S (<u>this</u>, <u>that</u>, <u>it</u>, <u>so</u>), and pro-N-pair.

A formal description of co-occurrence relationships was forwarded by Harris. This formal description accounted for what Harris called 'bound' pro-forms and 'indeterminately bound' pro-forms. The

former referred to pro-forms for which an antecedent could be determined and the latter to pro-forms for which one could not definitely identify the antecedent. Although the formal description offered by Harris was complex it offered a powerful method of capturing functional relationships without resorting to the more rigid and less rewarcing frame filling of Fries.

<u>Crymes and Hasan</u>. Two other linguists are mentioned at this point. Although both Crymes (1968) and Hasan (1968) have published recently, they are essentially structuralists. Their books are important in that both devoted their entire work to the problem of substitution.

Crymes' work is set in a tagmemic framework which was first proposed by Pike (1954, 1955, 1960). Basically, tagmemics is a slotand-filler type of grammar.\* Elson and Pickett (1962) define the tagmeme as "...the correlation of a grammatical function of slot and a class of mutually substitutable items occurring in that slot (p. 57)."

In defining a substitute, Crymes offered the following:

a SUBSTITUTE is a closed-list item which designates not a real-world referent but a member of a positioned class or subclass of constructions or words which it can, under conventional circumstances, replace... (p. 31)

Substitutes were discussed from three aspects: predicate slot, nominals, and modifers. Within each of these areas Crymes attempted to set up a hierarchy. Copious examples of forms that fill given slots were offered and discussed in terms of the hierarchy. Since Crymes has probably done the most thorough review of literature to date in this area, she was able to present a large number of substitute form classes (with the possible exception of semantic substitution as posited

It is beyond the scope of this review to pursue the intricacies of tagmemic analysis.

#### by Menzel (1970)).

Hasan (1968) also based her research on substitution in a structural framework which basically followed the proposals of Halliday. The total effort of the analysis centered on an attempt to describe the factors that contribute to grammatical cohesion. Cohesion was defined as "...the relation between, not within, sentences...(p. 18)." Hasan's work is especially valuable in the context of this study in that it attempted to describe cohesion factors in a textual situation. Hasan defined text as "...any piece of language, spoken or written, of whatever length, that does form an integrated whole (p. 1)."

In her attempt to describe certain cohesive factors Hasan makes use of the terms 'anaphora' and 'cataphora'. Anaphora indicates a referring back in the text and cataphora a referring forward in the text. Hasan also makes use of the term 'exophora', meaning, to refer to the situation in order to interpret the referent (cf. Hockett, 1958).

Cohesion is discussed under four main headings: reference, substitution, ellipsis, and conjunction. Subcategories of reference include pronominals, demonstratives, and comparatives. Items are considered to have the property of reference if they refer to other words in the text and depend on them for interpretation. In this category are many of the words traditionally referred to as personal and possessive pronouns. However, Hasan used categories only as a convenience. Her main concern was to describe the function of words and how they contribute to cohesiveness in a text.

A second major category, substitution, is differentiated from reference in the following manner:

The distinction between substitution and reference

is that substitution is more a purely verbal relation, a relation between linguistic items such as words or phrases as such, whereas reference involves the semantic interpretation. (p. 82)

Substitution was further divided into nominal substitution (which contained such members as <u>one</u>, <u>same</u>, <u>so</u>, and <u>not</u>), and verbal substitution (which contained only the word <u>do</u>).

The work of Hasan offers a concise system for analyzing elements that contribute to cohesion. Because of its straightforward nature, it is readily adaptable to experimental studies (e.g., Hawkins, 1969, used Hasan's categories in his experiment).

Obviously, there were many different orientations and approaches in describing grammar during the structural or descriptive era. From the literature one can observe the ever-expanding realization of the complexity involved in describing various substitution processes. Notable insights included the establishment of the so-called "zero-anaphora" (Bloomfield, 1933) or ellipsis (Hasan, 1968), the expanded domain of substitutes (e.g., pro-V and pro-S forms (Harris, 1955)), the appeal to extra-linguistic knowledge in determining antecedents (Hockett, 1958; Hasan, 1968), and the formalization of terms to describe the process of forward and backward pronominalization (anaphora and cataphora (Hasan, 1968)).

Generative Grammar

It is appropriate to partition generative grammar into several subdivisions since the field has changed drastically since the initial publication of Chomsky's <u>Syntactic Structures</u> (1957). Even incorporating the refinements put forth in Chomsky's later work, namely, <u>Aspects of</u> <u>the Theory of Syntax</u> (1965), would not expose the diverse thinking in

the field today. Indeed, for the layman, keeping abreast of changes in generative theory is quite difficult. However, using Chomsky's <u>Syntactic</u> <u>Structures</u> as a userul beginning point, the contributions of generative grammarians in describing language will be examined.

In Chomsky's early writing, a tripartite grammar was adopted which contained a "phrase structure", "a transformational component", and "morphophonemics". All sentences of English or any other language were considered to be either "kernels" or developed from kernels. Thus, it was proposed by Chomsky, following the suggestion of Z. Harris (1955), that from a single sentence such as <u>The boy is eating an apple</u>, one could derive such sentences as:

a. Is the boy-eating an apple?

b. An apple is being eaten by the boy.

c. The boy isn't eating an apple.

d. What is the boy eating?

e. Who is eating an apple?

Of course, this list of derived sentences could be further expanded.

Later refinements in generative grammar by Lees (1960), Katz and Fodor (1963), and Katz and Postal (1964) were followed by the publication of Chomsky's second major treatise, <u>Aspects of the Theory of</u> <u>Syntax</u> (1965), in which a rearrangement of relationships in the various components was postulated. The basic concept of kernel sentences was abandoned and the notion of deep structure was introduced. Also, transformations now were asserted, following Katz and Postal (1964); to be meaning preserving whereas in earlier works transformations had the power to change meaning. Although Chomsky originally proposed four major types of elementary operations, his new proposal contained only three-adjunction, substitution, and deletion.

<u>Pronominalization in a Generative Framework</u>. Lees and Klima (1963) presented one of the early comprehensive discussions of pronominalization within a generative framework. Their attempt at handling pronominalization concentrated on the transformational component. However, the transformational rules they devised proved inadequate to handle several classes of sentences (e.g., backward pronominalization). Major attempts to revise the pronominalization transformation were conducted by Langacker (1969) and Ross (1967). Postal (1969; 1971; 1972)<sup>-</sup> noted there was still a vast array of sentences which could not be accounted for by existing formulations (mainly transformations).

Postal decided the answer to the problem lay in devising constraints on the grammar (Postal's Cross-over Principle). Although his final attempt at formulating the principle is somewhat vague, one can basically state that Postal was concerned with stopping the movement of one NP over another with which it is coreferential during the transformational cycle. Lakoff (1968) also attempted to handle pronominalization through general constraints on the grammar. In addition, he proposed that certain pronouns (definite pronouns) would have to be introduced in the deep structure. Finally, Lakoff proposed integers, marking NFs at the deep structure level. This proposal differed from Ross (1967) in that Lakoff did not assume pronominalization to be cyclic.

All of the proposals forwarded failed to describe a class of sentences forwarded by Bach (1970), the so-called Bach-Peters Paradox. Bach noted a class of sentences (e.g., The man who shows hei deserves itj will get the prize hei deserves) that under transformational analysis of pronominalization would have to have an infinite deep structure. The

paradox is a paradox only if the NPs containing relative clauses (and not just the head NP) are relativized. Bach hinted that the solution to this problem was to allow pronouns to be introduced directly into the base.

The interpretive theory (Jackendoff, 1969; 1972), following Chomsky (1965) did allow for the direct insertion of pronouns into the base as lexical items. Jackendoff felt that coreference was purely a semantic concept which could not be accounted for in transformations.

This proposal, among others, has led to a stimulating debate within linguistic circles. There now appears to be two schools of thought, one generative and the other interpretive. First, there are those who advocate marking coreference in the base and stating pronounantecedent relationships in terms of constructints in the phrase marker (Postal, 1972, 1969; Harada, 1971; Lakoff, 1968). Next, there are those who advocate an interpretive theory of pronominalization (Bresan, 1971; Warburton and Prabhum, 1971; Jackendoff, 1969; Dougherty, 1968).

Within the transformational framework, linguists have forwarded proposals and counter-proposals to handle the problem of pronominalization. None of the proposals have been able to account for all the classes of sentences that contain pronominalized forms. Further, since the grammatical phenomenon of pronominalization is inter-sentential as well as intra-sentential, discourse pronominalization has remained largely unexplored by the transformationalist, since transformational grammar is typically viewed as a sentence grammar.

Transformationalists typically have not focused their attention on such pronoun features as case, number, and gender. Instead, these linguists have attempted to capture the total phenomenon of pronominalization. While this is consistent with the proposals originally set out by Chomsky (1965), that is, capturing significant linguistic r veralizations, this type of analysis does not lend itself to an experiment in written language discourse.

## Summary

The problem of substitution has been dealt with by linguists from the traditional to the transformational eras, however, there does not appear to be a single, viable description of the phenomenon. Early attempts at describing substitution focused on elaborate form and function classes. Later, linguists demonstrated that substitution was a complex grammatical phenomenon that could encompass not only pronouns, but also pro-verb, pro-adjective, pro-adverb, and even pro-sentential forms.

Some general characteristics of the four major linguistic periods are summarized on the following page (see Figure 3.1). From the analysis of data on the linguistic treatment of substitution and pronominalization the following decisions relevant to this study were made.

> 1. The writer will adhere to the position that substitution is the general classification of the grammatical phenomenon under study and other terminology will fall within this framework. Thus, substitution included any construction that takes the place of, or refers to, either in speech or print, another grammatical construction. Subsumed under substitution are: anaphora, cataphora, exophora, proforms, etc. The classification scheme for this study was delimited

FIGURE 3.1

•

. . .

TENERAL CHARACTERISTICS OF PRONOUNS OVER FOUR LINGUISTIC FERIODS

	L. C.C.	FCW	FUNCTION	REPLACEMENT FORM
، چع •	Fraditional (presentation) pre- scription and arcumption that language was static and inactive)	Elaborate form classes generally patterned on a Latin declension framework.	Little emphasis on function. In general a pronoun replaced a noun.	The form replaced was a noun or substantive.
N)	Historical (s. focus on lin- gristic changes; b. attempt to avoid overlap of form and fomotion)	A refining of classi- fication scheme of forms.	Pronouns were considered as "nark words".	Nouna, substantives, sub- ordinate clauses, entire principal clauses.
يبي .	Lesoriptive (2. nore scientific ripor in studying Language 5. substitution clars expanded)	Less emphasis on forms.	a) Focus on function b) Form was assigned by function.	In addition to the replace- ment forms of the historical period, replacement forms could also be outside the written language situation.
1	Generative (a. formulation of a theory of language b. variation of c inion as to how rronouns were gen- erated.	little emphasis on form.	Focus on grammatical relationships.	Noun or substantive.

to pronominal, anaphoric constructions. Both forms and function were used in as alling the anaphoric categories (see Appendix E for scheme):

- 2. Pronoun classes will be distinguished by form and function (see Appendix E).
- 3. The replacement form will be a noun or two conjoint nouns (Sam and Mary).
- 4. The replacement form will precede the substitution form. (pronoun). That is, the replacement form will be an antecedent.

### CHAPTER 4

While only two studies (Bormuth et al., 1970; Lesgold, 1974) have looked directly at the problems caused by certain abstitution forms in reading at the elementary school level, many remark are included elements of substitution in their work. Elements of substitution have been found in readability investigations and comprehension studies (in both oral and written language). The following sections will review this work.

#### Readability Studies

Readability studies have some significance in relation to substitution and the comprehension of substitution forms. Some of the readability studies, and the formulas that were derived from these investigations, contain an element of substitution, namely, personal pronouns and personal reference.

Dale and Tyler (1934) were the first researchers to directly include a measure of substitution in their formula. The number of personal pronouns was one of twenty-five factors they correlated with the criterion measure. The criterion used was seventy-four selections from which the cubjects were asked to choose the best and poorest conclusion from among five possibilities. This provided an ordering in terms of difficulty (Klare, 1963). However, in the final analysis this number of personal pronouns was not considered a sufficiently discriminating factor. Therefore, 1<sup>th</sup> is not included in the final formula.

Gray and Leary (1935) attempted a comprehensive study of the factors involved in making a book difficult or easy to read. From an analysis of all the various factors initially considered, the following five were eventually used in devising the actual readability formula:

- a. Number of personal pronouns
- b. Number of different hard words
- c. Average sentence length, in words
- d. Percentage of different words
- e. Number of prepositional phrases

The number of personal pronouns was not evaluated as an extremely important element although it was one of significant factors chosen from a list of forty-four. Its weight in the equation of readability was .00912, the lowest value given of any of the five factors. Later formulas (e.g., Kesler, 1941), which were based on the original Gray and Leary investigation, tended to disregard the pronoun factor since it appeared to have little influence in the formula.

The average sentence length in words, the number of affixes, and the number of personal references were considered by Flesch (1943) to be important factors in determining readability. The weight given to the personal reference factor was .0659, the lowest of the three variables. According to Flesch, the material could be rated on an easy/ difficult scale by the number of personal pronouns. It is important to note that pronouns in this study were equated with ease of reading. Nineteen or more personal references per 100 words meant "very easy" material while two or less indicated "very difficult". Flesch devised other categories between these extremes. His criteria for personal references was as follows:

> All first-, second-, and third-person pronouns except the neuter pronouns it, its, itself, and the pronouns they, them, their, theirs, themselves, if referring to

things rather than people. However, count he, him, his and she, her, hers always, even where these words refer to animals or inanimate objects. (p. 57)

The introduction of the "cloze" technique (Taylor, 1953) led to many new studies in readability. Two of these studies investigated the systematic deletion of given parts of speech from the text. Nor mally, every nth word, usually the fifth, is deleted from the passage. Louthan (1965), using a sample of 236 seventh-grade pupils, investigated the effects of systematic deletion on comprehension. Comprehension was measured by asking questions immediately after the subject had read the passage. Louthan defined his classification scheme for pronouns as follows:

> Type seven was a deletion of substantive uses of pronouns, in which syntax indicate that the word is a complete marker for a nominal unit designated earlier in the passage. This class also includes expletive uses such as "there was a crooked man..." (p. 297)

His conclusion as to the effects of deleted pronouns was stated, "If... pronoun substantives (Type seven) are deleted, there is no appreciable difference between the performances on tests following the cloze materials and those following unmutilated passages (p. 297)."

Coleman (1971) used the cloze procedure to determine which word classes contributed most significantly to complexity in written language. Using a modified version of Fries! (1952) grammatical classification
system to test a large number of word classes, Coleman found a correlation coefficient of .58 between comprehensibility and number of pronouns (cf., Gray and Leary (1935) who found a correlation of .476). Coleman concurred with Miller's (1951) explanation that pronouns refer to people, and "...people are better at reading about other people than about anything else (p. 35)." Flesch would obviously agree with this analysis. Coleman felt Miller's idea might be part of the answer but added that "it is also because pronouns are a form of repetition (p. 17.). Coleman, therefore, associated pronouns with ease of reading.

In summary, the ovidence from the readability studies indicates that personal pronouns do not contribute to a lack of comprehension in written language. However, none of the investigations took into account possible factors that may interfere with understanding of the antecedent/ anaphora relationship (e.g., distance between antecedent and anaphora). Also, these studies typically used a sample of mature readers and the results may not be generalizable to younger readers.

Studies that Directly Investigated the Problem of Substitution in Written Language

C. Harris (1948), in investigating the problem of literary comprehension, recognized several aspects of substitution that could prove troublestme. Among them were the problems of ellipsis, metaphor, idiom, and figurative language. In addition, Harris perceived the antecedent/anaphora relationship as an area of potential difficulty in comprehension.

The problem of finding antecedents was likened to that of a foreign language student coping with a new language. He related this

#### situation as follows:

The foreign-language student, it would appear, is striving to develop from the unfamiliar context another context that he can read or comprehend; he is attempting to substitute a test of meaningful symbols for a set of meaningless ones. (p. 283)

Harris went on to point out that readers of English sometimes face this same problem. He commented, "They face it when they have to "dig out" just which person is meant by "he" or what thing is mean: by "it" (p. 283)."

Harris felt that the further a referent was located from its pronoun the more difficult the thought of the passage would be to follow. A special set of passages was devised to test his hypothesis. The sample consisted of 100 men who had been recently discharged from military service. Seven items were used to test the subjects' knowledge of the antecedent/anaphora (pronoun) relationship. Intercorrelations showed these items to be heavily loaded with factors one and two (both measures of word knowledge). Later, Harris, on the basis of his first experiment and a second replication, decided the variance could be explained in terms of one factor---word knowledge (cf. Davis, 1944).

A major study by Bormuth, Carr, Manning, and Pearson (1970) directly investigated children's ability to understand substitute forms. The basis of this investigation was derived from Bormuth's book, <u>On the</u> <u>Theory of Achievement Test Items</u> (1970). Bormuth observed that a great deal of information is "...signaled by the relationships between sentences (p. 50)," One of the particular intersentence elements examined by Bormuth was anaphora. He defined anaphora as follows:

> Anaphora are pro structures called anaphoric expressions which refer back to (or substitute for) some structure called an antecedent or postcedent which appears in a different clause. (p. 50)

There are four major types of anaphora as described by Bormuth (see

Figure 4.1). Although Bormuth realized that anaphdrization occurs in large discourse units, he narrowed his examples to consecutive sentences.

The Bormuth et al. (1970) experiment was designed so that, from a total sample of 240 fourth grade children, sixty students would respond to each question type for a given structure. This was necessary due to the large number of structures being tested. In addition to the fourteen structures used in testing anaphora, the experiment also investigated basic sentence comprehension and intersentence syntax comprehension.

The category of personal pronouns proved to be the most difficult for the sample. This is contrary to the finding regarding personal pronouns in the readability studies. Due to the predominance of personal pronouns in children's basal readers (as opposed to other anaphoric categories), this result indicates an area of concern.

The Bormuth et al. study incorporated the sentences or sentence pairs in a paragraph of four or five sentences. While there was no direct control of the distance between the antecedent and anaphora one can infer they were in close proximity to each other. It would not be surprising if further study, using anaphora that was more widely separated from its antecedent, demonstrated an even greater problem in understanding. Even a cursory examination of basal readers shows that a great deal of anaphora is widely separated from the antecedents. The ability of children to understand substitute forms that are widely separated is unknown. However, Bormuth et al. (1970) have taken a first step past the type of test that merely incorporates the sentence. This first step toward discourse analysis has broken new ground in evaluating children's understanding of grammatical structures.

A partial replication of the Bormuth et al. (1970) experiment

### FIGURE 4.1

### "BORMUTH'S CLASSIFICATION OF ANAPHORA

#### Pro Words

a.	N	Joe picked up the bat. (He) is a good hitter.
		Joe eats ice cream by the gallon. Jim (does) too.
c.	Aj	Muscular boys showed up. (This kind) plays well.
		Joe sat under a tree. The air was cool (there).
		Joe may be able to play. The team hopes (so).

### Deleted Modifiers

	A1	The how with the back (1)? (A) (m) () )
а.	14	The boy with the hat will pitch. (This boy) is good.
ь.	v	The boys practiced hard. (This) helped.
c.	Аj	Joe was extremely fast. (This fast) a player was needed.
d.	Av	Joe went somewhat <u>reluctantly</u> .* (This) was unusual.
		•

#### \*reluctance

.. -

# Ellipsis

a.	The boys wanted to eat a quart of ice can	lere wasn't
	(that much) left, so they had to be sa	.ed with what
_	they got.	

- Although I don't see Bill much these days, she seems b. V to (...). c. Aj The stands were green. The fence was (...) too. d. Av We all agreed to meet at nine o'clock. The boys were <u>on time</u>.
- The girls were not (...).

### Semantic Substitute

8.	N	Jim gathered the bats and balls. He put (this equipment) aw	π.v.
Ъ.	V	The boys played very hard. (Their effort) won the game.	
с.	Aj	The boys were able and eager. (These qualities) helped.	
d.	Av	John sat on the roof. (This perch) helped him see better.	•
θ.	S	Joe hurt his hand. (This accident) worried the team.	•
N = S =	nom: s'ent	inal V = verbal Aj = adjectival Av = adverbial tential	Å.

was performed by Lesgold (1974). Lesgold challenged the findings of the earlier study in relation to the order of difficulty assigned to the various anaphoric structures. Of paramount interest to the present investigation was the finding of 91.7 per cent comprehension in the category of personal pronouns. This compared with the Bormuth et al. finding of 64.5 per cent comprehension. As an explanation for this difference Lesgold contended that the Bormuth et al. study may not have controlled for semantic factors. Also, Lesgold felt that "....an anaphora cannot be comprehended unless both it and its antecedent are simultaneously in operating (short-term) memory (p. 334)." One can assume that Lesgold would associate distance between antecedent and anaphora as an interforing factor in understanding this relationship. The writer feels that Lesgold's contention concerning uncontrolled semantic factors is valid. However, one must challenge the hypothesis of the necessity for both the anaphora and antecedent operating in short-term memory for comprehension to occur. This explanation cannot account for anaphora that is widely separated from its antecedent.

Lesgold (1974) pointed out that differences existed between the Bormuth et al. (1970) investigation and his own study. They were:

> (a) the present study used oral, constructed responses while Bormuth et al. used written, multiple-choice responses; (b) the present study explicitly controlled the number of semantically plausible potential answers in each passage; (c) the location of the target structure in the passage was counterbalanced in the present study; and (d) Bormuth et al. used 420 fourth-grade subjects while the present study used 80 subjects from the third and fourth grades. (p. 334)

Two differences that Lesgold did not mention were (a) the Bormuth et al. study used the Dale-Chall formula to control readability while the Lesgold did not; and (b) neither study controled for word recognition

#### ability of the students.

Sur CY

Substitute forms have been recognized as a factor in comprehension although the results of the studies are variable. The readability studies tend to associate substitute forms (at least personal pronouns) with ease of reading. Comprehension studies, which often investigated the phenomenon in a more direct manner, present differing views. The methodology used in the investigations may explain some of the differences reported. In addition to the conflict of whether substitutes represent an interfering factor in reading comprehension, two other aspects of substitution have been hinted at or directly raised. First, the effects of multiple antecedents is not known. Next, the effects of the distance between antecedent and anaphora has yet to be investigated. Both of these questions are addressed in this study.

Language Acquisition and Pronominal Substitution

Oral language ability appears to be related to success in reading (Athey, 1971; W. daugh, 1971; Ruddell, 1970). The literature on language acquisition to be reviewed will focus on (a) the age(s) at which various substitution forms appear; (b) the possibility of a discernible developmental pattern connected with these substitution forms; and (c) evidence that children produce and comprehend substitute forms by the time they enter school.

Observational Studies

An early study by Davis (1937) described the language develop-

ment of twins compared with "other" children. The ages of the children observed were five and one-half, six and one-half, and nine and one-half years. A definite developmental trend was found in the case of the second and third person pronouns. The results concerning the first person pronouns were inconclusive. In a further analysis of the data Davis noted the use of the third person masculine and feminine pronouns. A substantial difference in use was noted with musculine pronouns being dominant. This imbalance in usage was consistent for both male and female subjects. An explanation for these results can be found in the observational situation since Davis structured the situation around a 'cowboys and Indians' format. (See Kennedy (1970) for other considerations in child language study.)

Goodenough (1938), using a sample of 203 children enrolled in the nursery school and experimental kindergarten of the University of Minnesota, institute of Child Welfare, attempted to observe selfawareness development of children through their use of personal pronouns. The language samples were obtained from two separate situations. The first observation took place with the child engaged in free play with his or her classmates while the second involved an adult observer who provided toys and picture books but avoided direct verbal contact. The children were observed within a month of the mid-point of their birthdays. A record of at least fifty consecutive responses was recorded.

Analysis focused on the appearance of a given pronoun group and the ratio of pronouns in relation to other pronoun groups and complete utterances. Since the study was exploring social development many of the linguistic groupings appear composat unusual in light of current linguistic descriptions (e.g., <u>I</u>, <u>me</u>, and <u>myself</u> represent one independent group). This type of grouping was consistent with Goodenough's notion that first person pronouns are a sign of social activity and awareness.

The percentages of pronouns used by the subjects did not seem to be related to sex and age. Certain individuals and categories did exhibit change. Many of Goodenough's conclusions centered upon the techniques used in the study rather than on the actual effects of pronouns on social development. In relation to the situational variable she commented, "...the immediate situation exercises an important effect upon the form and content of speech...(p. 344)." The limitations of merely using numerical counts to judge language development was another key observation. She remarked, "Developmental changes are qualitative as well as quantitative...(p. 344)." Finally, in a crucial observation that is often credited to recent scholars, she wrote of the inadequacy of comparing the child's speech with an adult model. Goodenough stated, "...too much attention has been paid to the type of grammatical analysis used by adults and too little to the developmental changes in conceptual thinking and social drives that lie in back of verbal expression (p. 344)."

A study of language development by Young (1942) included a sample of seventy-four preschool children ranging in age from thirty to sixty-five months. The sample was subdivided by sax and socioeconomic status. Speech protocols were obtained while the children were engaged in normal activities such as indoor and outdoor play. Few details were given as to how the linguistic groups were devised other than a statement alluding to the use of Jespersen's <u>Essentials of English Grammar</u>.

The investigation revealed that pronouns accounted for approximately twenty-eight per cent of all comprehensible words spoken. In relation to development, personal pronoun proportions did not change

. .-

A diary study was reported by Weir (1962) of her non Anthony who was twenty eight to thirty wonths old at the time of the investigation. This creative states is contriguing in that the recordings were made while the child was along and engaged in pre-sleep monologues.

Weir found the use of some pronouns more pronounced than others. For example, it was the most frequently observed form, yet there appeared to be restrictions in the production of this form. Although an intricate analysis of contextual constraints was not undertaken by Weir, several were generally noted. Of prime importance was the fact that the child used "...the correct syntactic slots as complete = standardEnglish, but the category of gender has not yet been loose = ...(p. 7k)." Another observation was the absence of the reflexive pronoun (other than one instance of <u>himself</u>). Anthony typically used the form <u>I told</u> ma instead of <u>I told myself</u>.

An analysis of why the child does not possess a firm grasp of pronominals was offered by Weir. She reascred as follows:

It is certainly not surprising to fina prenominal substitution with the child's class of personalized pronouns so poorly learned in that it involves viewing the speech event not only from the point of the addresser and addressee, but also from the point of view of the person or thing discussed. (p. 74)

In order to determine if a transformational grammar (based on / Chomsky's <u>Syntactic Utructures</u>) was capable of "...describing children's grammar as a self-contained system and indicating developmental trends (p. 408).", Menyuk (1963) undertook the task of analyzing the language of forty-eight nurmery and forty-eight first grade children. The sample was somewhat atypical in respect to 1.9. (mean i.e. equalled 130.3 for the nurmery school children and 132.0 for the first grade children). All children with physical disabilities and speech defects were eliminated from the study. The mean age equalled three years, eight months for the nurmery school children and six years, five months for those in the first grade.

Speech was elicited in three separate situations. In addition, a classroom language sample was taken for cross-validation purposes. Two separate grammurs were written by Menyuk. The first was a grammar of adult speech and the second a specially constructed child grammar which was used to describe the language of the children in her samples:

While all the children used the promen transformation (e.g., Blacky new Tippy and he was mad), only sixteen nursery and twenty-six first grade children demonstrated use of the pronominalization transformation (e.g., <u>There isn't any more</u>). In examining transformations that were used by significantly less than 160 per cent of the first grade children, Menyuk found only fifty-four per cent using the pronominalization transformation (p = .05). No differences between the baxes were noted.

The investigation completed by the Harvard group using the now famous due of Adam and Eve has become the basis of several papers (Prown et al., 1963; Brown and Bellugi-Klima, 1964; Brown and Fraser, 1963; to mention a few). Though basically a longitudinal observation study there were elements of elicited imitation, grammar writing, and controlled comprehension. The study was initiated in 1962 with two children, Adam (twenty-seven months) and Eve (eighteen months). A third

6I.

child, Larah (twenty seven months) was later added to the study. At the end of the observation period the children were forty eight, twenty eight, and forty-eight months old respectively. The difference in ages is due to the fact that Eve was only observed for ten months while Adam and Sarah were studied for a period of twenty months (Brown, 1973). Transcripts of the children's speech were made every month during the investigation. A minimum of two hours was recorded although excension ally up to six hours of speech was taxed.

In an analysis of this data Brown and Bellugi Sline (1965) described the pronominal form appearing in comparation with the moun phrase it replaced (e.g., [ migs if roshes beet). According to the "there, this process represents a logical sequence of development. y state:

> One can here see the equivalence in the process of establishment. First the substitute is produced and then, as if in explication, the form or forms that will eventually be replaced by the substitute. Adam spoke out his pronoun anteredents as chronological consequents. (p. 318)

A slightly similar situation was reported by Bloom (1970) in her observational study. The children in the Bloom study were younger than Adam and Eve (Kathryn and Brie were mineteen months, one week old and Gia was twenty-one months old at the commencement of the study). The exact instance of the pronominal form co-occuring with noun phrase was not recorded, however, age differences probably account for this. Bloom did note the demonstrative pronouns this and thats being used in a systematic, yet non-adult panner. The observation was recorded as follows:

Kathryn's use of the demonstrative pronouns [phis] and "thats" appeared to indicate departicular instance of

A11.

-

the referent she/named and was not strictly deictic in the sense of pointing out the referent directly-for the sake of pointing it out. In every instance in which she used the construction, the referent named was manifest and Kathryn either looked at it or picked it up, or, in the case of events, carried out the particular action she named... (pp. 43-44)

Perhaps this action could be the non-linguistic counterpart or antecedent to the phenomenon described by Brown and Bellugi-Klima (1964).

In relation to the children's early use of proforms, Bloom observed the following:

The names for 'things' and 'actions' are important, but he learns that he can get by without them and begins to use proforms such as "this", "this one", "do", "it", "here" quite early. (p. 168)

This statement may be accurate but one must bear in mind Bloom's earlier observation in relation to demonstrative pronouns. In analyzing the utterances of her subjects it appears that the appropriate nonlinguistic environment was often affecting use of proforms. For example, in the mance <u>It won't fit</u>, the child was attempting to place a block on grain.

Huxley (1970) reported an observational study that specifically examined the development of personal pronouns in two children (Katriona and Douglas) from the ages of two years, four months to bree years, minē months. Using a classification system taken from the writings of several linguists (Fillmore, 1968; Postal, 1966; Householder, 1955; Lyons, 1968) Huxley attempted to chart the development of pronouns in the two children. Major categories explored were as follows:

> Egocentric pronouns in subject position (<u>I</u>, possessives) Egocentric pronoun in non subject position (<u>me</u>) Non egocentric pronoun, participating in discourse (<u>you</u>) Anaphoric, non demonstrative animate pronouns (<u>he</u>, <u>she</u>, <u>her</u>, <u>it</u><sub>np</sub>)

Anaphoric inanimate pronoun  $(\underline{it_{np}})$ Flural pronouns (we, you (pl.) Anaphoric, non demonstrative plural (they)

Several observations are pertinent to this review. First, the developmental pattern of pronouns tends to be some paterratic. For example, a form may appear quite early and then not reappear for some time. Also, it was noted that Katriona's grasp of the pronominal system was more sophisticated than that demonstrated by Douglas although his general linguistic development was generally more advanced. This led Huxley to speculate that "...his greater difficulty over pronouns was due to the fact that his linguistic structure as a whole was more complex than Katriona's, whose structures are generally easier, with fewer variables to manipulate (p. 159)." A final observation was that certain categories appear to be more easily grasped by the children than others, that is, they are acquired early and tend to be used in a manner that resembles the adult model. For example, the egocentric pronoun in non subject position posed no problem for either child yet plural pronouns (e.g., we/us) tended to cause difficulty. Huxley felt that this may be due to the more complicated set of semantic features associated with the plural pronouns (cf., Waryas, 1973).

# Imitation and Comprehension Studies

Using a sample of forty children from kindergal don to fourth grade, C. Chomsky (1969) investigated the acquisition of four syntactic constructions including pronominalization. She used three other grammatical constructions in her experiment and found errors more closely to age (for pronominalization) than to the constructions being <u>ik/tell, promise, and easy/eager to see</u>). The cut-off age for pronominalization appeared to be five years, six months, that is, children seemed to fail the pronominalization tasks before this age. As an explanation for this regularity in acquisition Chomsky wrote:

> ...the principles of pronominalization appear to be acquired by the majority of children at about the same age. Our conjecture about the reasons underlying this difference is that the rules for pronominal reference are considerably more basic and more general than the rules underlying our other constructions. (p. 109)

Although Chomsky's study is valuable one might question the conclusions since only the pronominal form <u>he</u> was used in the test. There is an implication here that all pronominal forms that apply to this transformation would be acquired equally (cf. Berko (1960) who may also have generalized from inadequate data). In spite of the fact that only the pronominal form <u>he</u> was used, this study does present evidence that certain grammatical structures are not mastered until the primary grades (cf. Olds, 1968).

The pronoun case preference of young children was explored by Hatch (1970). The sample consisted of forty pre-kindergarten children (mean age: ,five years, one month) and twenty pre-second grade children (mean age: seven years). An oral language elicitation format, using a reversible S-V-O pattern into which pronouns (<u>I</u>, <u>me</u>, <u>she</u>, <u>her</u>, <u>he</u>, <u>him</u>, <u>we</u>, <u>us</u>, <u>they</u>, <u>them</u>) were randomly inserted, was employed to determine if pronoun case was a confusing element.

Statistically significant results prompted Hatch to make the following conclusion:

Pronoun case, then, seems to be an area of some confusion for the child who is beginning a reading program as well as for the second-grade child who has already been exposed to preprimers and primers which contain only the grammatical pronoun case. (p. 42) According to Lesgold (1972b), children's short term memory prevents them from processing anaphoric structures (pronouns) in the same manner as adults. From the results of an earlier study (1972a), using adult subjects and the medium of print, Lesgold argued that:

> ... pronoun reference, and perhaps anaphoric reference in general, between two propositions results in those propositions being processed into a form in which their element is represented only once-jointly-for the two propositions. Further, when a common element of two propositions is not "flagged" in the sentence's surface structure form (e.g., with a pronoun), this joint representation is less likely. (1972b, p. 2)

Proceeding from this argument, Lesgold (1972b) attempted to investigate whether children, who had demonstrated the ability to comprehend pronouns, process sentences (containing these forms) in a manner similar to adults. Using subjects from grades three and four, he first ascortained whether the subjects demonstrated ability to comprehend the referent/anaphora relationship using the Bormuth et al (1970) technique. Satisfying this requirement of comprehension, he then used the probe technique to determine whether the sentences were processed in an adult manner. An examination of the performance of the children indicated that the processing was not the same, specifically, "... the short term memory of limitations of the children reduced their ability to complete anaphora comprehension processing (1972b, p. 16)." It must be noted that this study used both the medium of print and oral language in that half of the subjects read the passages while the remainder both read and heard a tape recording of each passage. Lesgold (personal communication) reported no significant difference in the performance of the subjects in relation to presentation mode.

A study by Maratsos (1973) lends support to the evidence already compiled that the comprehension of pronouns is developmental

in nature. One hundred and six children aged three, four, and five years old were tested to evaluate the effect of stress on understanding pronominal co-reference. To demonstrate comprehension the children were asked to act out the sentence. A sample sentence that demonstrates the importance of stress in oral language (in given situations) is as follows:

#### John hit Harry, and then Sarah hit him.

The referent changed depending upon whether or not <u>him</u> is stressed. Although stress is not an important aspect of the receptive act of silent reading, it is important in oral language. The results of this investigation showed a definite developmental trend in terms of accurately portraying the sentences.

#### Oral Language and the Beginning Reader

Much of the research on the relationship of oral language and reading has attempted to show that children use the semantic and syntactic constraints in reading that a demonstrable in oral language production.

In observing the reading errors of 100 beginning readers, Clay (1968) found that seventy-two per cent of their oral reading errors occurred in equivalent morpheme class or morpheme-sequence class structure. This result and examination of the children's correction patterns led her to conclude that "...the young child's guesses at points of uncertainty in his reading tend to be dominated by his control over the synt is language (p. 437)."

use of grammatical context in oral reading. Two separate samples were

obtained for the study (N = twenty-one for group one; N = twenty-four for group two). From the results of this study Weber concluded the following:

> These analyses of oral reading errors have provided substantial evidence that beginning readers use their knowledge of grammar to marrow down the words that compete for a given sentence slot, just as they surely do in understanding speech. (p. 162)

An investigation of children's reading strategies by the use of sentence-matching and sentence-splitting tasks, by Francis (1972), indicated findings in agreement with Schlesinger (1968) that children tend to read for content. She also felt that errors tended to be corrected on the basis of semantic appropriateness as opposed to syntactic information (p. 119). The sample consisted of fifty children ranging in age from five years, nine months to seven years, three months (mean ages at the time of testing).

While the above noted studies tend to show that children do make use of syntactic and semantic constraints in both their oral language and oral reading, other studies have looked at the general relationship between oral language and reading fougers, 1970; Tatham, 1970; Ruddell, 1965).

Ruddell (1965) investigated the relationship between oral and written patterns of language structure and reading comprehension. A significant correlation was reported between reading achievement and performance on an investigator-constructed syntax test. Ruddell showed that a child had more success in reading when the language of the text corresponded to his own oral language patterns. This finding is somewhat controversial in that the patterns the child uses may merely reflect the generally simple patterns of the English language. As Nurse (1967) has succinctly stated, "It is not clear whether these ratterns are easier to read because the structures are more frequently used in children's language, or because they are less complex structures (p. 5)."

In extending Ruddell's research on oral language and reading comprehension Tatham (1970) found similar results. She concluded that children at both the grade two and grade four level were better able to comprehend passages that contained frequent oral language patterns, as opposed to infrequent patterns.

Bougere (1969), using a sample of sixty first grade pupils examined the predictive value of four different measures compared with reading achievement. She used the T-unit (Hunt, 1965), mean length of the T-units, the ratio of subordinate clauses to T-unit length, and the ratio of sentence-combining transformations to T-units as her measures of oral language. Oral language samples were gathered by an elicitation procedure. Bougere reported that the various measures of oral inguage competency were not highly related to reading achievement.

In addition to the studies previously mentioned, several oftenquoted investigations tend to show a positive relationship between oral language ability and reading ability (O'Donnell, R., Griffin, W., and Norris, R., 1967; Loban, 1963; Strickland, 1962).

#### Summary

The evidence demonstrates that the acquisition of substitute forms is developmental in nature. This conclusion is, of course, subject to the caution that children will differ from each other in their individual development. Of special interest to this study is whether

or not children comprehend pronominal forms in oral language by school .go. While the evidence is not overwhelming, the indications are that at least some aspects of pronominalization are not understood by some children (Hatch, 1970; C. Chomsky, 1969; Menyule, 1969; Chai, 1967) Thus, a reasonable statement at this time would be that substitute forms are acquired over a period of time, the exact timetable for this acquisition is still to be determined, and the acquisition period probably extends (for some constructions) into the school years.

Several studies have been reviewed that indicate there is a relationship between oral language ability and reading comprehension ability. There have been no studies that directly examined the rela--tionship between oral language production of pronouns and the complementing ability to comprehend such forms in silent reading.

#### CHAPTER 5

#### THE EXPERIMENTAL DESIGN

A design consisting of a 2X2 factorial was used in this study, the factors being reader level, and sex. The dependent variables were number of antecedents in a discourse, distance between antecedent and anaphora, and anaphoric category (category indicated the case of the anaphora--nominative, objective, and genitive).

This chapter will discuss the classification of the anaphora, selection of sample, standardized instruments, the analysis of the basal readers, construction of the test passages, a description of the investigator-designed instruments (a. Word Recognition Test; b. The Tests of Anaphoric Reference-Cloze Format (TAR-C); c. The Tests of Anaphoric Reference-Multiple Choice Format (TAR-MC)), oral language production, the procedures used in the administration and scoring of the instruments, and the treatment of the data.

### Classification of the Anaphora

A decision was made to limit the study of substitution to pronouns and later, to anaphoric pronouns. In her discussion of grammatical cohomon, for (1968) described the anaphora/cataphora/exoptora distinction (see Chapter 3 for a discussion of the terms). With the exception of a small experiment conducted by Schlesinger (1966), using adult subjects, cataphoric forms have not been investigated. The only study that specifically explored children's use of exophoric pronouns was that of Hawkins (1969) and this study was devised to examine SES differences in production rather than comprehension. While pronouns that are exophoric

and cataphoric in nature certainly deserve investigation, pronoung that are anaphoric in nature are more predominant.

The review of previous studies indicated that personal pronouns have been the object of two recent investigations with the results being contradictory (Bormuth et al., 1970; Leegold, 1974). The initial decision to investigate personal pronouns that were anaphoric in nature was derived from the conflicting cosults of these studies. Although Bormuth et al. (1970) and Lesgold (1974) considered personal pronouns one anaphoric category there is evidence that certain personal pronoun types may be more difficult to understand (in terms of the antecedent/anaphora relationship) than others. The work of Fagan (1969) and Coleman (1971) indicate that the genitive case personal pronouns may represent a confusing factor in understanding the antecedent/anaphora relationship. Hatch (1970) presented evidence that some children at the grade two level conlused case relationships in oral language. As a result of the findings of the above mentioned studies the category of anaphoric personal pronouns was subcategorized according to case relationships. In addition, other anaphoric categories taken from the investigations of Bormuth et al. (1970) and Lesgold (1974) were used in the anaphoric category classification scheme (see Appendix E).

Both Harris (1948) and Mosberg and Shima (1969) felt that distance between antecedent and anaphora would increase the difficulty in understanding this relationship. There have been no studies which have directly tested this variable. Thus, a decision was made to examine the effects of distance between antecedent and anaphora on the comprehension of this relationship.

Lesgold (1970b) has hinted that the addition of antecedents

would increase the difficulty in understanding the antecodent/anaphora relationship. While only Lesgold has offered any indication that this variable may be important in the comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora celationship the investigator reasoned that this variable mum be of importance due to the burden placed on memory, both in coding the antecedents and in rotalling them.

This review of studies and the decisions that were made bused on their results indicated direction for the investigation. However, a doubt could remain as to the importance of investigating only constructions that fit this rather narrow area, basically pronominals that are anaphoric in nature. Therefore it was decided to examine basal readers used in the teaching of reading. Two basal readers, which are currently used in Canadian schools, were examined in the screening (see this chapter for the analysis). The basal readers <u>Magic and Make-believe</u> (Thomas Nelson and Sons' and <u>Stories Cld and New</u> (Copp-Clark Fublishing Co.) were randomly selected from among those series currently being used in Canadian schools. The results of this analysis supported the focus indicated by the review of previous studies. The exact composition of the anaphoric categories will be discussed later in this chapter.

### Selection of the Sample

The choice of students in their second year of school as the sample was determined from results of provious studies dealing directly or indirectly with anaphora, both in oral language and the media of print. There were indications that certain grammatical structures in general, and anaphoric structures in particular, are not "inderstood properly by some school age children. Therefore, a decision was made to seek a

grade where the literature indicated a lack of oral language facility in the case of the selected oral lenguage categories.

In a written language study, that (1967) found that sentences with ambiguous actovedence could be comprehended by children in grade eight and above while children in grade five were generally smalle to identify the correct antecedent in this type of sentence. Returning to the studies of Bormuth et al. (1970) and Leegold (1974), conflicting evidence is presented as to the grade four child's ability to comprehend anaphoric strictures. The results of these studies were particularly conflicting in terms of the anaphoric category entitled "personal" - "ouns". Fagan's (1969) investigation, using students drawn from grades cour, five, and six indicated that the simple pronoun transformation is easily comprehended while the pronominalization transformation (genitive) represents a ficult aspect of language.

The results of studies in language acquisition indicate a developmental trend in relation to anaphora, however, the majority of studies have only considered the personal pronoun system. The research does indicate that certain oral language aspects of anaphora are not comprehended by some school age children (Hatch, 1970; C. Chomsky, 1969; Menyuk, 1969). Hatch (1970) presented the evidence that is most important to this study. She found that pronoun case is an area of confusion for some second grado children. Since the child at the grade two level is apparently still in the acquisition process, both in oral language and reading, this grade appeared to republic to a viable area of focus. If the child is indeed still acquiring ity in manipulating anaphoric structures in oral language then this is an opportune moment to examine the relationship between oral language and reading ability. The choice

·

of students in their second year of schooling was also bused on the fact that the study was conducted in the spring of the year and that a larger , range of conding ability would be evident (as opposed to grade one).

The first population for this study consisted of atomical in their second year of school enrolled in the Edmonton Catholic School System during the souther of April and May, 1973. The initial number colocted was 180 children who are randomly selected from the total population made available. These children were enrolled in seven different schools. Seven children were eliminated from the group because a second language was spoken in the home. A decision had been made to belief children from totally English-speaking environments. The children who were eliminated were identified by their homeroom teachers as being exposed to a language other than English. Typically, this exposure came from parents were first language was a language other than English.

Two other measures were administered in order to eliminate other variables which may influence the results. It was decided that a child would have to score 2.0 or higher on the <u>Gates-MacGinitic Reading Test</u> (1965), <u>Primary B</u> which was administered by the classroom teachers in January of 1973 to all is ldren in the second grade of the Edmonton Cathelie School Cystem. A decision was made to eliminate those children who did not score at least 2.0 or higher on the comprehension portion of the <u>Gates-MacGinitic Reading Test</u>. This resulted in the elimination of thirty children from the initial sample. Those children who scored 2.0 or higher on the comprehension section of the <u>Gates-MacGinitic Reading</u> <u>Test</u> were also given a word recognition test constructed especially for the study and described elsewhere in this chapter. Children who had and the propagating ten or more words were eliminated from the final capacity of the word recognition test remained in four more children being

1. The goal of employing these two accounting accounces was to analogies of riscent in the study would not be exceeded a low. We are repeating to which may "aborfere with their comprehend that" the acterial read.

Aft r the excitation of the children was were expected to two hanguages, the elimination of these who follow the schere of 2.0 or higher on the corprehension section of the Quites,MargHeithie <u>Reading Test (1961), Privarz H</u>, and the removal of some who missed as so than ten words on the specially designed Word Recognition Test, 129 of the 180 children remained. These children wells dichotomized on the basis of sex and reading achievement with 3.6 (in reading achievement) being the content point. For the purpose of statistical analysis equal cells were used with fifty low Readers and fifty High Readers in each cell. Further, each cell of High and the cells on the basis of sex a set of random numbers was used to eliminate twenty-nine of the final 125 children. The mean silent reading comprehension scores of the mean sample are the main falle 5.1.

In addition to the main sample a selected subsample was mandomly selected for part significant in an oral language production task. A total of Corty-eight shildren ware selected from the main sample of 100. Twelve children ware selected from the boys who were High Readers, the girls who were High Readers, the boys who were Low Readers, and the girls who were Low Readers. The mean reading achievement scores of boys and girls differed by only one month. Since the sample was divided

TABLE 5.1

MEAN GRADE LEVEL SCORES, AND RANGE OF SCORES FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE ON THE GATES-MACGINITIE READING TEST (1965), PRIMARY B,

BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)

	Silent Reading Comprehension	Mean (			
Gr.	Group	Boys	Girls	Total	Range, of Scores
2	High Readers	4.4	4.5	4.5	3.7 - 5.4
	Low Readers	2.8	2.9	2.9	2.1 - 3.6
	Total	3.6	3.7	3.7	2.1 - 5.4
с Т	Range of Scores	2.3-5.4	2.1-5.4	2.1-5.4	- -

according to silent reading comprehension scores, a marked difference is evident between the means of the High and Low Readers. The difference of 1.6 years is the same for both the boys and girls.

The mean chronological ages of the sample are depicted in Table 5.2.

### TABLE 5.2

MEAN CHRONOLOGICAL AGES IN MONTHS, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)

	Silent Reading Comprehension	Age i	n Konths	· · ·
Gr,	Group	Воуз	Girls	Total
2	High Readers	90.2	90.1	90.1
•	Low Readers	90.4	89.7	.90.1
	Total	90.3	. 89.9	

As shown in Table 5.2, the High and Low Reader groups are evenly matched

in mean chronological age. The mean age of the girls is four months - rounger than the mean age of the boys.

# Standardized Instruments

Certain standardized tests were used in this study to screen the children and to establish independent variables. These measures are discussed in this section.

# Gates-MacGinitie Reading Test

<u>The Gates-MacGinitie Reading Test (1965), Primary B, Form 1</u> was used as a screening and classification instrument. Those children who scored below 2.0 on the comprehension section of this test were eliminated from the sample. The children who qualified for the final sample were assigned to High and Low Reader groups (the cut-off score was 3.6).

A reliability of .81 (Technical Manual, 1965) is reported for the test. Although Spache (In O. K. Buros (ed.), <u>The Sixth Mental</u> <u>Measurement Yearbook</u> (1965)) and Wantman (In O. K. Buros (ed.), <u>The</u> <u>Sixth Mental Measurement Yearbook</u> (1965)) have criticized certain aspects of the test, both concluded that it is useful for determining the level of competence for groups of pupils in reading.

# Lorge-Thorndike Intelligence Test

The Lorge-Thorndike Intelligence Test (1957), Level 2 was administered to all subjects including those who were not included in the main sample. The inclusion of all subjects was to minimize the effects of being "left out" that might be experienced by children who were not in the main sample. This test has received favorable reviews in the various <u>Mental Measurement Yearbooks</u> edited by O. K. Buros (e.g., Tittle, In Buros, 1972; Freeman, In Buros, 1959).

The odd-even reliability for this particular level of the <u>Lorge-Thorndike Intelligence Test</u> is low (.586), however, this can be accounted for since there was a systematic alternation of geometric and pictorial items in subtests 2 and 3. Reliability for this test (other levels) is typically high with correlations ranging from .882 to .940.

Table 5.3 presents the means and range of intelligence quotients obtained by the main sample on the Lorge-Thorndike Intelligence Test (1957), Level 2, Form 1, by reader level and sex.

#### TABLE 5.3

# MEANS AND RANGE OF INTELLIGENCE QUOTIENTS,

	Silent Reading Comprehension	Intel			
<u>Gr.</u>	Group	Boys	Girls	Total	Range
2	High Readers	113.88	116.12	115.02	097-132
•.	Low Readers	109.76	107.36	°108.56	092-130
	Total	111.86	111.76	111.81	092-132
	Range	093-130	092-132	092-132	

BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)

While there is only a slight difference between the means of the boys and girls, a difference of 6.46 exists between the means of the High and Low Readers. As expected, the difference favors the High Reader group. It is interesting to note that while High Readers (girls) score higher than their male counterparts, the reverse is true in the case of the Low Readers with boys' mean score being about two points .

83

# The Detroit Tests of Learning Aptitude

-The Detroit Tests of Learning Aptitude, Subtest 16 (1967) were used to test the children's visual memory span for letters.

It has been reported in various studies (e.g., Schlesinger, 1966) that the reader's eye voice span (EVS) roughly corresponds to a phrase unit. Because the distance factor in propositions is itself a form of memory measurement for semantic information, and since the readers must use visual cues to aid their prediction of meaning, the Detroit Test was chosen to investigate how children operate in this regard. In this test the child is shown a set of lower case letters on a card. Each set of letters is printed on a separate card and one second per letter is allotted for viewing. The child is then required to repeat, in exact order, the letters printed on the card. Scoring of the test was consistent with the directions in the <u>Manual</u> (1967), however, the raw scores were used instead of the mental age equivalents.

The mean scores and range of scores are given in Table 5.4. Table 5.4 reveals that High Readers score approximately two points higher on the visual memory test than the Low Readers. There is a nearly one point difference favoring the girls over the boys.

# Analysis of the Básal Readers

The basal readers <u>Magic and Make-believe</u> (Thomas Nelson and a Sons) and <u>Stories Old and New</u> (Copp-Clark Publishing Co.) were randomly selected from among those used in Canadian schools to determine the 🕆 TABLE 5.4 👌 🦿

84

MEANS AND HANGE OF SCORES FOR VISUAL MEMORY FOR LETTERS ON THE LETROIT TESTS OF LEARNING APTITUDE, SUBTEST 16, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)

Ċ)	Silent Reading	4′	Mean Scores	•	
Gr.	Comprehension Group	Boys	Girls ·	Total	Range
2	High Readers	14.72	15.89	15.30	10-24
• .	Low Readers	13.16	13.80	13.48	10-20
·	Total	13.94	14.84	14.39	10-24
	Range	10-24	10-23	10-24	. *
	· · · · ·				-

incidence of the various anaphoric categories (see Appendix E for a description of the categories).

Although the classification system was already delimited due to considerations arising from the results of previous studies, several problems were encountered in analyzing the texts. The major concerns and the decisions that were made are as follows:

> The analysis was delimited to include only anaphoric constructions. Certain sentences contained constructions that confused this apparent straightforward situation. An example of this problem is demonstrated by sentences (a) and (b).

> > a. "I can't do it," said Mother Mouse.

b. Mr. Rabbit looked into the pot. "I wish I had, some carrots!" he said.

In sentence (a), the word  $\underline{I}$  is cataphoric in nature, that is, its referent follows rather than precedes. In sentence (b), the word  $\underline{I}$  is again theoretically cataphoric in nature,

depending on the word he, which in turn depends on its antecedent'Mr. Habbit for interpretation. Yet, if the reader knew the general rules of writing, he would intuitively realize the relationship and that I had to be Mr. Rabbit since a new paragraph would be needed if someone else were speaking. If this situation was perceived, the word I and its antecedent (Mr. Rabbit) now represent an anaphoric relationship. The question is whether or notchildren in their second year of school would perceive this rather complex situation. While there is no direct evidence to indicate a decision, the investigator surmised that a greal deal of written language sophistication would be needed on the part of the reader. Thus, such instances were considered cataphoric and not included in the incidence count. Other situations that were encountered were treated in a similar manner.

In children's literature in general, and in the basal readers in particular, it is not uncommon to note a typically inanimate object becoming animate. For example, one often discovers cars that talk etc.. Also, talking animals, although animate, are frequently encountered. In one story that was analyzed, a roller coaster car assumes the male singular pronoun (he) and converses with both children and certain (supposedly) inanimate objects (e.g., the ferris wheel) in an amusement park. Discussions with primary school teachers indicated that such adult anomalies pose few problems for children. Thus, a decision was made to

2.

treat such normally inanimate objects as animate if they assumed such a role.

3. Expressions such as <u>My</u>, oh my were encountered in the texts. Since no referent exists for such forms they were not counted.

To insure consistency in the analysis of the basal readers, certain guidelines were established. Following Robertson (1966), the incidence count was taken from every twentieth page of the reader being analyzed. A decision was made to eliminate poetry and plays since special types of writing are involved in these genres. Also, a page had to contain at least fifty running words, not including titles, to be considered. If a page did not comply with the guidelines, the investigator proceeded until the necessary requirements were fulfilled. The analysis was continued from that page.

The results of the analysis are depicted in Table 5.5. Series A produced a total of 148 anaphora which fit the descriptive categories. This figure represented nine per cent of the total number of words on the pages analyzed. Category 1 (six per cent), Category 2 (one per cent), and Category 7 (one per cent) accounted for seven per cent while all other categories combined only totaled two per cent.

The thirteen categories analyzed in Series B produced a total of 217 anaphora. This total accounted for approximately eleven per cent of the words found on the pages analyzed. As in the case of Series A three categories accounted for a large proportion of this percentage (Category 1 - six per cent; Category 2 - one per cent; Category 7 - two per cent). The forms and functions of the three categories of highest incidence are as follows:

# TABLE 5.5

# DISTRIBUTION OF THE ANAHEORIC CATEGORIES

# IN GRADE TWO HASAL READERS

	Serjan	Cuterrory	an a
7	<i>ж</i> А.	1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10	
		11 12 13	$\frac{1}{1}$ $\frac{1}{122}$ $\frac{1}{122}$
		1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13	123     30     7     8     0     0     40     0     2     2     1     1     1     1     (Total) $-17$
		and Make-believe (Thomas Nelson 2 Old and New (Copp-Clark Publi	
	Category 1.	This category contained the f he, she, it, and they. These or replace an animate noun or function as the subject of a	forms refer to nouns. The forms
	Category 2.	This caterory contained the f her, it, and them. The forms replace an animate noun or no	refer to or

function as direct of jects, indirect objects, and objects of prepositions.

Category 7. This category contained the forms sy, out, year, bis, her, its, and their. The forms meter be or replace an animite mean or nouns. for forms function to indicate possession.

The autima classification and an forming of Concerning a

# Word Recognition Test

The Bolgh Lester Fight Word Test (1962) format was elepted for this test. In place of the words used in the Bolgh Fight word Test (1964), the investigator substituted all the words that were used in the stories. A decision was made to exclude any subject who missed more than ten words on the test. Although Betts (1954) has suggested ninety-nine per cent accuracy in word recognition as the criterion for independent reading some reading specialists (Spache and Spache, 1973) feeld this figure is arbitrarily high.

The criterion used in this study was quite high. To qualify for the final sample the children had to obtain a score of 270 or hither out of a total of 380 words. This means that a percentage score of ninety-seven or higher had to be achieved.

The test (Appendix 5) was administered to all students in the original sample (N=180). Although this procedure added time to the data gathering procedure, the investigator felt it important that certain children did not experience a "left out feeling". The <u>Lolch Masic Cicht</u> <u>Word Test (1942)</u> format presents the student with four separate words on a line. The administrator calls a word from each line and the subjects must circle, or in some manner indicate, the correct answer. This procedure is repeated until all the words are called.

#### TABLE STA

# MEANS AND RANGE OF SOME OF THE WORL RECOMPTION THEFT.

PY REA	14:12	11.V	1.	o la	. H. K	1.24	11871
--------	-------	------	----	------	--------	------	-------

laka ( sedan Rompirka ka sedan Ire a	1 <b></b>	-11-11-	Tester 1	la ngg
 High an dera	173. D.	17 J		ana an tana an tana. An tana an tanàna amin'ny fi
Kow Bergelerge	1178 - 198	an a	(***) -	
POtel	37474,1-5		in the second	e for a state
Eange	371-380	en en e	(70 - 00.)	

The Figh Readers mean more on this test was approximitely two points higher than that of the low Readers. Sex superiority was nearly one point with the difference favoring the girls.

Construction of the Passages Ford in the Study

Four stories were drawn from basal readers (Magia and bakes believe (Selson and bons), Friends Clarad New (W. J. Gase), More Frienes Old and New (a. J. Gage), and stories (Linna New (Coppellark)) and modified to reflect the variables under study. The stories were randomly chosen from those that contained either two or four characters. This was necessary since both the TAR-O and TAR-MO, the tests that used the passages as the reading stimulus, used forms that contained either two or four characters. In addition to the fnumber of characters! variable, which were reflected in the TAR as intecedents, the stories were modified to take into account the variables of anaphoric category and the distance factor. These variables and their inclusion in the passages will be discussed in this section. In conjunction with the medification of the proognithe enversal practices considerations has to be taken into account. These former primarily in the operative an attention epsil of the defineer, the 90.1 months). Such fortune an attention epsil of the defineer, the 1997 to define the construction of the defineer that were readily understood were taken into account coming the construction The prime behad of module includes an automatic account coming the construction grade teachers ate has been rated as successful takeness of the trade to ensert that resulted from the conversations were evaluated in the filet teach described enserts to be a successful takeness.

### Incidence of Angelory

As seen in Nucle 201, the anaphonic of terminer wore not encode inner in equal numbers. In the Copy-Clark Ferrer (<u>staning (lipp) New</u>, Category 1 represented sixty-three per cent, dategory 4 sixteen per cent, and dategory 7 twenty-one per cent of the total of those salected for study. The percentages from in the Thomas Nelcon Derive (Salis 192 <u>scherbelieur</u> (were: ) discory 1--sixty-five per cent: discorp (sociation ter cent) using or T--ningteen for sent.

Since it was not bically impossible to have the scherter pass we reflect the exact percentages encountered in the basal rediers, i cliquity arbitrary ratio of sixty (lategory 1), twenty is stegory 1), and twenty (Category 7) was doubled. These ratios permitted the investigation of the selected anaphoric bategories in a format that was reasonably similar to that encountered in the bacal readers. The use of the arbitrary ratio was necessary since the TAL reflected the obtegories in the passages
(e.g., it was the difficult to have streteer, bitwenty serves the the items setsed the parent of the strength items tents of weves, this was provide steps the periodition of items that set bits of the strength of we mailfield to tachty periodic

,

## Providence of the second second second second

Constant end of the state of the sector of the sector

a. Culy wilked into the most estimated associated

"My gradies (P aller' residents) along "P was a sig-

by they well as interthe the true within the state

My geodnees!" debent renurles, to some "for our one afferd to est such extensive fruit "

ist discourse encourse of , hogid to conservate algorith of the state discourse. Severe, in shirt jugg is not only a constant of the disc offer july of the encourse discourse and by addition to conserve constructed with onth of these states are shown addited the four encourses and on this investigation cance only this superiones states.

Two formats were used in the construction of the local of a NAR-NO. These formate were, of course, this into the processe, to reflect the variable of inducer of anterevented. In the Circl format (Form 1 of the TAN-C and TAN-ML), two enterevents were that if its the pastware, one male and the femile. In the weight format, I among of the The second to be a first addition denotes which and the second states of devices.
The second true of the correspondent second states are second states.
The second states of the correspondence second states are being and the second states.
The second states of the correspondence second states are being and the second states.
The second states of the correspondence second states are being and the second states.
The second states of the correspondence second states are being and the second states.
The second states of the correspondence second states are being and the second states.
The second states of the correspondence second states are being and the second states.
The second states of the correspondence second states are being and the second states.
The second states of the correspondence second states are being and the second states are being and the second states.
The second states of the correspondence second states are being and the second states are being and the second states are being as a second state.
The second states of the second states are being as a second state are being as a second state.
The second states of the second states are being as a second state.
The second states of the second states are being as a second state.
The second states of the second states are being as a second state.
The second states are being as a second state.
The second states of the second states are being as a second state.
The second states of the second states are being as a second state.
The second states of the second states are being as a second state.
The second states of the second states are being as a second state.
The second states are being as a second state.
The second states are being as a second state.
The second states are being as a second state.
The second states are being as a second state.
The second states are being as a second s

A set of a set of

A general loss in a spectral to the second product to the discount of the second secon

and the second second second production of

A statistical construction of the Burnel Construction of the Burnel Western Tests Management (Statistic Construction), and the Burnel Western Construction of the Burnel Western Construction of the Burnel Burne

and Shima stated, "As the number of words between the anaphoric term and original concept increases, it would be expected that stru-turing around the original concept word would be more difficult (pp. 18-19)."

The use of "number of words" as the distance measure is attractive in that computation is quite simple. However, problems arise in using this measure. Weber (1970b) raised the question of how one should treat sequences such as <u>call up</u>—one word or two? Also, all of the classic problems encountered in readability research such as defining or classifying 'hard', 'easy', and 'common' words would be present if one attempted to use the "number of words" as the distance measure (see Klare, 1963; Chall, 1958).

Some of the difficulties inherent in using "number of words" might be solved by substituting the notion of morphemes, however, this o appears only to create problems of a different nature. For example, difficulties could arise with irregular past tense forms. This problem can be demonstrated with the past tense of <u>go</u> and <u>walk</u>. While it may be obvious to count <u>walked</u> as two morphemes, the dilemma remains as to how one should treat <u>went</u> (see also, Cazden, 1972; Dale, 1972; Weber, 1970b; Slobin, 1967).

Since it was assumed that children process meaning as they read, a decision was made to use a semantic rather than a syntactic measure of distance. Hanf (1972) has recently developed a promising classification scheme for segmenting discourse into cognitive topics called propositions. She explicates this system as follows:

> Dividing the discourse into cognitive topics is segmenting the language into words or groups of words expressing a <u>proposition</u> (author's underlining), assertion or thought and contoing a finite verb, implicitly or explicitly stated. (p. 175)

C. Chomsky (1973), in reviewing this study, felt the classification scheme was valid for the sample used in Hanf's investigation (ages of the children ranged from five to nine years), but cautioned against its use with older subjects. She felt it "...is unreliable whenever the speaker advances into more sophisticated transformations (p. 27)."

It was decided to adapt this classification scheme for determining the distance between antecedent and anaphora. Some modification was made to the Hanf guideline (see Appendix D). Basically, these modifications were made to eliminate certain inconsistencies that were perceived. For example, in the Hanf scheme, catenation (a string of verbs) is included as part of the verb phrase. Yet, in reference to conjunction, a predicate is implied, thus designating a proposition. Consider sentences (a) and (b).

a. The children ran and skipped and played.

b. The children saw a clown, and a tiger, and an acrobat. Referring to the Hanf guideline, sentence (a) would contain only one proposition while sentence (b) would have three. It is contended that a more reasonable classification would be to imply a subject before the verbs in sentence (a).

The actual number of propositions between antecedent and anaphora (in the passages) ranged from zero to five. An arbitrary decision was made to create a dichotomy with zero to two propositions representing one category and three to five propositions representing the second. The distance factor was built into the passages in such a way that equal numbers of the zero to two proposition category and the three to five proposition category could be encountered in random fashion by the readers.

### Other Modifications of the Passages

Since the passages originally were drawn from the appropriate basal reader levels for the grade two sample, it was not deemed necessary to apply other vocabulary controls.

A small modification of the passages was accomplished in the case of cataphora. As previously stated, this study was delimited to include only anaphoric structures. Thus, front shifting was necessary for some quotations. For example, in the sentence, <u>"I think a storm is</u> <u>coming," said John.</u>, the speaker was front-shifted. The sentence then read, <u>John said, "I think a storm is coming."</u>.

Tests of Anaphoric Reference-Multiple Choice Format (TAR-MC)

The Tests of Anaphoric Reference-Multiple Choice Format (TAR-MC) were constructed using two of the specially designed passages (see Appencix A for the passages in combination with the multiple choice format). One of the passages (Hereafter known as Form 1) contained two antecedents and the other (Hereafter known as Form 2) contained four antecedents. As previously mentioned two characters were present in Form 1 so that both forms had four plausible answers for the tests.

The multiple choice format was constructed so that the subjects would be given the anaphora and their task was then to identify the antecedent for that particular anaphora. Each multiple choice question contained four possible responses. In the case of Form 1, the four choices included the two interacting characters who actually served as antecedents and two additional characters. These dummy elements provided plausible answers (previously mentioned) for this format. On Form 2 of the TAR-MC, it was not necessary to introduce any additional story character: since there were already four antecedents.

In formulating the test directions it was decided to focus the children's attention directly on the anaphora. This decision was based on the age of the children used in the sample. Also, using this method, it was possible to eliminate any confusion on the part of the children as to which anaphora was focused upon in a given question.

To discourage "set" for the task, distractor questions were interspersed throughout the tests. These questions used the same format but focused upon some aspect of the discourse other than the antecedent/ anaphora relationship.

#### Validity

While it is difficult to offer any type of statistical validity for the TAR-MC, Form 1 and 2, it is possible to argue for content validity. Since the test comprised the stories and the multiple choice questions, the content of both must be considered. The construction of the stories has already been discussed. The fact that the stories were taken from the appropriate basal readers, and the precautions of including only anaphoric categories, of representing proportionately the three main categories of anaphora found in the basal readers, of balancing the number and gender of characters involved, of arranging the distance between anaphora and antecedent in objective and systematic fashion, and of eliminating possible sources of confusion such as sex role stereotyping, would appear to indicate that the stories were valid for the intended purpose.

Each question constructed on the story contained the names of

characters represented in the story--only one of which was the correct answer within the test directions. The child's attention was focused on the anaphora in the text (through numbered lines) and directions were standard. In order that the child would not develop a set for pronouns, distractor questions on forms of language other than anaphora were included. Furthermore, the choice of the correct answer in all questions was randomized. Stories and questions were subjected to university faculty members for evaluation and comments and were tested in a pilot study before being administered to the study sample.

### Reliability

Split-half reliabilities were computed for both Form 1 and Form 2 of the TAR-MC. The distractor questions were not included in the computation. The reliability coefficient for Form 1 was .67. Form 2 reliability was calculated to be .63. When corrected for length by the Spearman-Brown Prophecy Formula, these coefficients were respectively .80 and .77. These reliabilities appear satisfactory for the purposes of this study (Kelly, cited by Thorndike, 1951).

### <u>Administration</u>

ta.

As previously mentioned, the subjects' attention was directly focused on the anaphora for a given question. On the recommendation of the second grade teachers who advised the investigator in the construction of the TAR, all the lines in the stories were numbered. This facilitated the location of the anaphora. Although this added an element of unnaturalness to the reading task it was felt that the children would have a very difficult time locating the anaphora if this was not done.

The numbering of the lines enabled the administrator of the test to direct the children to a particular anaphora on a given line. The entire sequence for testing is as follows:

- a. The children were directed to read the entire story silently to themselves.
- . b. Upon completion of the story the children's attention was focused upon a particular anaphora in a given line.
  - c. The children would then choose the proper antecedent (from a list of four) for that particular anaphora.
- d. This procedure would be repeated until all questions were completed.

Tests of Anaphoric Reference-Cloze Format (TAR-C)

While the TAR-MC required the subjects to identify the antecedent when their attention was directed to the anaphora, the Tests of Anaphoric Reference-Cloze Format (TAR-C) (see Appendix A) supplied the antecedent and the subject had to furnish the anaphora. In both instances an assumption is made that the subjects had to understand the entire relationship in order to complete the task successfully.

The cloze procedure in general has been used primarily in readability and comprehension studies (Bickley, Ellington, and Bickley, 1970; Hafner, 1966). Various deletion patterns are possible when using the cloze technique but the every <u>n</u>th word method is most common. The validity and reliability of this method has been the subject of a good deal of research (Bormuth, 1969, 1967, 1966, 1963; Greene, 1964; Ruddel, 1963; Weaver and Kingston, 1963; and numerous others). The particular pattern used in this study was that of selected deletion. Such a pattern has been used previously (Bradley, 1971; Coleman, 1971; Louthan, 1965).

Gallant (1965) used a sample of 273 pupils in grades one, two,

and three to determine if the cloze procedure was appropriate in terms of reliability and validity. Using the split-half technique, Gallant obtained correlations of between .90 and .97. The cloze scores were compared to standardized reading measures and tested for significance. The correlations ranged from .65 to .81 (p = .01). The conclusion of Gallant's investigation was that the cloze procedure is appropriate for the primary grades.

While the standard cloze technique dictates that every <u>n</u>th word of a discourse be removed the selected cloze procedure allows one to remove only selected items (e.g., mass count nouns, adverbs, prepositions, etc.). Typically, the items to be deleted are predetermined by the researcher. In this study the selected cloze procedure was not used as a general comprehension measure, rather, it was assumed that the subjects would have to understand the antecedent/anaphora relationship in order to supply the deleted words. The deleted elements in the cloze format were the anaphora built into the passages (e.g., <u>he</u>] <u>I</u>, you, etc.).

To discourage "set" for the task, additional words (not anaphora) were deleted from the passages. "Set" for the task occurs when the subjects' responses to a given question is unduly influenced by the answers to previous questions. In this instance, if only anaphora were deleted the subjects might make an educated guess as to the correct answer without actually knowing it. Thus, the deletion of other words (e.g., nouns, verbs, adjectives, etc.) would tend to negate the effects of "set" for the task. In addition to not deleting any other anaphora. as distractors, care was taken not to eliminate any of the antecedents. The use of distractor items in combination with the selected anaphoric deletions provided a total of fifty blanks. This is consistent with

Bormuth's (1967) contention that fifty items are needed to insure validity. The instructions used in the administration were compatible with those suggested by Bormuth (1964).

### Reliability

Although Gallant (1965) has established the suitability of the cloze procedure in general, no research has been reported indicating the appropriateness of the selected deletion pattern with a grade two sample. Thus, a decision was made to determine the instrument's reliability prior to its administration to the entire sample. Table 5.7 reports the test-retest reliabilities. The interval between the test and retest was a one week period. The decision to use this interval was made in consultation with a statistical advisor from the Department of Educational Research, University of Alberta.

#### TABLE 5.7

TAR-C TEST-RETEST RELIABILITY (N=30)TestReliabilityTAR-C (Form 1).936TAR-C (Form 2).841

The reliability coefficients obtained for the TAR-C indicate that the vests are quite reliable.

Oral Language Production

A subsample of forty-eight children was randomly selected from the main sample of 100 to participate in a language production task.

Twelve students were selected from each group within the main sample, that is, male High and Low Readers and female High and Low Readers. Oral language production was chosen (over imitation or comprehension) on the basis of findings by Fraser, Bellugi, and brown (1963). Replications of this classic study have supported the main findings that production implies the ability of imitation, and perhaps more important. comprehension (Nurss and Day, 1971; Lovell and Dixon, 1967; Turner and Ronmetveit, 1957). Reading is a receptive language activity, however, since oral language production implies receptivity it was felt that more variability would be obtained using this type of task.

The children were asked to make up a story about four pictures or sets of pictures. The pictures were chosen to reflect the written language test variable of number of antecedents. This was accomplished by choosing two pictures that contained two antecedents (one male and "one female). Two different pictures were selected that contained four antecedents (two females and two males). The format of the pictures was constructed so that two of the pictures depicted a sequence of action while the other two showed still scenes (see Appendix 0 for the pictures and directions used in the oral language task). The format is merioted in Table 5.8.

dritten language "name tags" were placed on each of the anaracters in the pictures and these names were pronounced for the subjects. The reasons for this are as follows:

> 1. Naming the pictures and providing a written stimulus of the names asked the memory burden of the children who otherwise would have to remember the numes they rave the characters. It was felt that if the children had to remember all the names, they could tend crity to involve one or two characters in their stories.

- 2. In one picture, a dos appears. Dince this dog could be identified as a male or female, the antigning of a name (Sam) gave a firm identity. Also, in this situation, it balanced the ficture in reference to male and female characters.
- It was felt that assigning names to the characters would decrease the specific really true difficult to equilibria, 1969).

#### TABLE 5.8

### CONSTRUCTION OF THE ELECTURES USED IN THE

#### ORAL LANGUAGE FRODUCTION TACK

Picture Number	Format	No. of Anteordents
1	Still	Two
2	Sequence of Action	Two
3	Still	Four
1.	Sequence of Action	Four

The directions for the oral language production task were designed to minimize probing and talk from the investigator (see Cowan et al., 1958). If probing was necessary, open-ended questions were asked (e.g., <u>Can you tell me any more</u>?). All stories related by the children were taged for later analysis.

### The Pilot Study

The Pilot Study was conducted approximitely three works prior to the beginning of the main collection of data. In addition to The Pilot Study, a small pre-pilot session was carried out. This session was not conducted formally but was designed to elicit responses from the children concerning "set" for the various tasks, especially in regard to the TAR-C and TAR EC. Also, three second grade teachers were assol to compart on such physical factors as size of the print and line epacing.

The main verticies from the president events when the obling of dummy elements to the TAKesland FAK-MS. The purpose of these dummy elements (described proviously) was to limit guessing. A second deviation war to make, as nearly as possible, the print and specing uses in the TAR-C and TAR-MS consistent with that encountered by the children in their basal readers.

The formal Filot Study involved the Edministration of all the instruments used in the investigation. Thirty children enrolles in their second year of school in the Edmonton Catholic School System (and assigned to the investigator by this system) constituted the cample. The main purposes of the Filot Study are as follows:

- 1. To determine the time required to administer the instruments used in the study.
- 2. To determine the reliability of the TAR-C.
- 3. To determine the optimum number of students to be tested in a sitting.
- 4. To determine the amount of time the students could sufficiently attend to the tasks without becoming unitally distracted.

Results of the Pilot Study revealed the TAR-O reliabilities to be quite high (see Table 5.7). The test-retest reliabilities were .936 for Form 1 and .841 for Form 2 (3=30).

The decisions reached concerning the number of students to be tested in a sitting, the time necessary for administering the various instruments, and the proper amount of time to allot for each instrument are discussed in the following section.

### Collection of the later

The bit were collected outing the last trace weeks of join. 2022 and the first three weeks of Mag, 1922. In addition to the form function of the second constraints of by them between epoch of the were fulfield by the drive the total with spreadures for the there. But such have suplem were publicled of the investigator.

Collection of the sete was solving into two parts. The investe gater designed tests and at a farified in traments were administered during the last targe weeks of April, 1973. Foal language samples were citainer-during the first three weeks of May, 1975.

On the Masis of the Idlot Study it was decided to administer the TARAD and TARAMS in small groups of approximately six students. The use of small groups was especially important in reference to the facted since the administrator had to be available to spell works for the children. This was done by providing each child with a blank piece of paper. If the child wishes to make a response where the spelling was unknown, he told the word to the administrates and the properspellin, was recorded on the paper. Although the small group proteorion evoluot we emphal in giving the TAR-CD, it was decided to follow the came testing procedure to insure consistency. A depision was more to systematically alternate the administration of the T R=0 and  $\omega=2.00$ This was done to minimize (restice effect. For example, if there ever twenty-four children in a could that qualified for the final testing. four groups would be prested for the JAR-O and JAR-MD, Arbitrarily naming these groups A, C, C, and C they would be given in the following manner:

, t

104,

Spring (approximately also sufficient to a group

- $\Lambda$  . The MC , Horn by TeP 1, Formal, The MC, rome by TABS , then
- (a) IAG 351, Flamman, Toles 1, Eleman april 1, 301, averaging 104, element Reserved and the March 1, second approximation of the second sec

I TAL C. Sorr 1, TA -MT, Form 1, Cur C. Sorre 1: TeB (S) Sorre 1 Upon completion of Theory, Form 1, Group - words return to the order reconstance of the normalization of the Table 2.20 March 2.20 mail - Doing no we have world continue units. If groups has been a main stored to end and and TAL-MD. At is time was a group given more than one Table - rock (a) in a single sitting. Single sittings were apprecipately the type doubles in duration of the tests. Also, care was taken not to dispute any special activities going on in the school at the time of testing.

The above described procedure for administering the feats was used in the Filct Study and found to be estisfactory.

The protocols from the oral language production the serve obtained in individual sessions with only the investigator within while present. The investigator attempted to engage the shall ar serve versation before initiating the elipited production task. This was done to put the shill at wass and remove some of the formality that exists in such a situation. The tage restrict while to put the shill are seen students and they were told the dession while the tages of the second role of the formality of the shill be tages descrete their stories. The investigator attempted to allow the such asked to hear their stories. The investigator attempted to allow the such and the hear at least one of their stories played book on the tag restrict.

All of the standardized measures were commistered in the

Shiltenita (assoc) constra algorize transitigator, is an  $\mathcal{L}$  - constraint operator, is a second constraint operator of the second constraints and the second constraints of the constraint operator is the test of the test operator is t

### The second s

1. Several sectors of the sectors of the Soles of the sector sectors of the se

### 14.20 C 20.20

a methic licit construction is contract on the state of the state of the state of the extra the extra the city of the extra the contract of the extra the extra the contract of the extra the extra the contract of the extra the extra the contract investigations feel the extra the contract of the extra the extra the extra the extra the extra the contract of the extra the extr the extra the extra the extr the extr the extra the extra the e

(a) which explore error relation errors out your close of (a) which errors are not use of the second reactivity of the second close of the second close of the second reactivity of the second close are second close on a second close of the sec

> ంగా సినిమాలు సినిమి సంగారం ప్రసిద్ధింగా సినిమి ప్రాయోజింగి సినిమి సినిమి సినిమి సినిమి నిష్ణ సినిమి అల్లు

using diarts lies solve to us distant ways and solve in to nic actions. It took <u>distant</u> which the state through the although there are exceptions when in the close of the state products the stre <u>distant</u> is contense on which on pronouncies of an to solve ocurse sequence (c), the pronormalization of <u>distant</u> weaks to prove the Thus, it was necessary to works to the pronounce the sour in such. instances since both answers indicate a knowledge of the antecedent and are grammatically correct.

107

#### Analysis of Covariance

A two-way analysis of covariance was used to analyze the dependent variables. Twenty-four separate analyses were carried out in examining the three major dependent variables under study. Grouping on the analysis of covariance was by reader level and sex. Although there was extensive screening of the children in relation to word recognition, it was possible to miss up to ten words and still be included in the final sample. Thus, a decision was made to include word recognition as the covariate.

Analysis of Variance

Both a two-way and one-way classification were used in analyzing the data generated by the subsample who were drawn from the main sample. First, a two-way analysis of variance, with grouping by reader level and sex, was conducted to analyze five different oral language variables.

Also, a one-way analysis of variance was used to determine the relationship between oral language production of anaphora and the understanding of such on the written language measures. Test sample grouping on this analysis was by reader level and sex.

### Computations of Correlations

Correlations were calculated for both the total sample and the selected subsample. Twenty-nine variables were analyzed for the entire sample and twenty-four for the subsample.

# Analysis of Variance with Repeated Measures

To determine whether there was a significant difference in the difficulty of the three major anaphoric categories. (Category 1, Category 2, and Category 7), an analysis of variance with repeated measures was carried out. If the analysis indicated a significant difference the Scheffe procedure was applied to test the difference between the means. This test is conservative in respect to Type 1 errors and the significance level was set at .05 (as was the level for the other analyses in the study).

### t-Tests

A major research question of this investigation was to determine whether or not the number of antecedents interacting throughout a discourse is a significant variable in the understanding of the antecedent/ anaphora relationship. This variable was built into the passages and reflected in the TAR-C and TAR-MC.

The t tests were carried out to determine the effects of additional antecedents, that is, whether the entire sample scored significantly lower on the tests that contained four antecedents (as opposed to the tests that contained two antecedents).

The effects of increased distance between antecedent and anaphora on the entire sample were also tested by means of t tests. The t tests were applied to the data to determine whether the entire sample scored significantly lower on the TAR-C and TAR-MC when the distance was 3-5 propositions rather than 0-2 propositions .

Finally, t-tests were used to analyze data produced by the subsample on the oral language production task. The scores of the High

and Low Anaphora Producers were compared to determine whether either group performed significantly higher on the TAR-C and TAR-MC.

#### Summary

The TAR-C and TAR-MC were used as treatments in this study. The construction of the passages used in the TAR-C and TAR-MC included all relevant variables under investigation. These variables were the number of antecedents interacting in a discourse, the distance between antecedent and anaphora, and the three anaphoric categories chosen for the study.

In addition to the written language tests, elicited oral language protocols were obtained from a selected subsample of children who were drawn from the main sample to examine the relationship between oral language production of anaphora in performance on the TAR-C and TAR-NC. The main sample consisted of 100 students, who were in their second year of schooling, from the Edmonton Catholic School System. Grouping was by reader level (High and Low Readers) and sex. Equal cells were created with twenty-five children in each cell. In addition to the main sample, a subsample of forty-eight children was selected on a stratified random basis. The subsample participated in the oral language tasks.

A two-way analysis of variance and covariance was used to determine if High and Low Readers differed significantly in their performance on the selected dependent variables which were reflected by the TAR-C and TAR-MC. Analysis of variance with repeated measures was the statistical procedure used to determine whether the anaphoric categories were comprehended equally by the groups in the main sample. To discover the effects of number of antecedents and distance between antecedent and anaphora on the total sample, t tests were carried out. Finally, computations of correlations were used to examine the relationship between twenty-nine variables including intelligence and visual memory and performance on the TAR.

Two different methods of data analysis were used to examine the relationship between oral language production of anaphora and performance on the TAR-C and TAR-MC. A two-way analysis of variance, with subsample grouping by reader level and sex, was used to compare the production levels of High and Low Readers. Also, t-tests were used to determine if High and Low Anaphora Producers differed significantly in their oral language production of anaphora.

110 .

#### CHAPTER 6

#### PINDINGS: COMPREHENSION

### OF THE ANTECEDENT/ANAPHORA RELATIONSHIP

The main purpose of this study was to investigate the beginning reader's ability to comprehend connected discourse which had been written to include the antecedent/anaphora relationship. This chapter will examine the results of the various analyses in relation to the High and Low Reader's performance on the TAR-C (cloze format) and TAR-MC (multiple choice format). The three dependent variables analyzed were: (a) number of antecedents interacting in a discourse, (b) the distance between antecedent and anaphora, and, (c) the case of the anaphora as represented by the categories investigated.

> Differences Between High and Low Reader's Ability to Comprehend the Antecedent/Anaphora Relationship When the Effects of the Number of Antecedents Are Considered

The first major question focused on the abilities of High and Low Readers to comprehend the antecedent/anaphora relationship when the number of antecedents in a discourse is considered. Hypothesis 6.1 was formulated to examine this question.

Hypothesis 6.1

There will be no significant difference in the performance of High and Low Readers on the TAR-C and on the TAR-MC regardless of whether the number of antecedents is two rather than four.

Hypothesis 6.1 was tested using a two-way analysis of covariance with grouping by reader level and sex. The covariate was word recognition.

The TAR-C, Form 1 contained two interacting antecedents while TAR-C, Form 2 was written with four antecedents.

TAR-C

Table 6.1 depicts the mean scores and standard deviations for the sample by reader level and sex.

### TABLE 6.1

MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF THE TAR-C, FORM 1 (2 ANTECEDENTS) AND TAR-C, FORM 2 (4 ANTECEDENTS) BY

READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)

	TAB-C, Form 1		TAR-C, Form 2	
Group	Mean	S.D.	Mean S.D.	
High Readers	32.56	4.49	31.20 3.89	
Low Readers	25.12	6.84	23.42 6.50	
Воув	28.30	6.28	26.28 6.39	
Girls	29.38	7.42	28.34 6.73	

The highest possible score on the TAR-C was forty. The total sample was 100 children in their second year of schooling with fifty members in each grouping, that is, fifty High Readers and fifty Low Readers. The sex groupings also contained fifty members.

<u>TAR-C. Form 1</u>. The two analysis of covariance indicate that High Readers performed significantly higher on the TAR-C, Form 1 than Low Readers (F. = 22.07, df. = 1/95, p < .001). No significant difference was noted in relation to the mean scores of boys and girls (F. = .45, df. = 1/95, n.s.). Interaction between reading level and sex was significant (P. = 4.46, df. = 1/95, p  $\leq .05$ ). Figure 6.1 depicts the interaction between reader level and sex.

### FIGURE 6.1

### INTERACTION BETWEEN READER LEVEL AND SEX

ON TAR-C, FORM 1 (N=100)



The reading level/sex interaction indicates that girls in the High Reacing group scored higher on the TAR-C, Form 1 than boys who were High Readers, however, the opposite was true in the case of Low Readers. It is interesting to note that the covariate affected the significance of the interaction. Without the covariate the interaction would not have reached the .05 level of confidence. This perhaps indicates that Low Readers who are boys have more difficulty with word recognition and this difficulty interfered with comprehension.

"TAR-C, Form 2. Form 2 differed from Form 1 in that the former

held four antecedents interacting throughout the discourse while the \* latter only two. Table 6.1 shows the means and standard deviations for TAR-C, Form 2, by reader level and sex.

The two-way analysis of covariance revealed only one significant main effect. High Readers performed significantly higher than Low Readers on the TAR-C, Form 2 (F. = 31.51, df. = 1/95, p < .001). No sex difference was indicated by the data (F. = 1.34, df. = 1/95, n.s.), nor was any interaction present (F. = 1.01, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

TAR-MC

The multiple choice format of the TAR contained twenty items. As in the case of the TAR-C, Form 1 of the TAR-MC contained two antecedents that interacted throughout the discourse while Form 2 was comprised of four antecedents. The means and standard deviations for the sample are reported in Table 6.2. Table 6.2 shows that the mean score

### TABLE 6.2

MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF THE TAR-MC, FORM 1 (2 ANTECEDENTS) AND TAR-MC, FORM 2 (4 ANTECEDENTS) BY

READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)

TAR-MC, Form 1

TAR-MC, Form 2

	•				
Group	Mean	S.D.	Mean	<u>S.D.</u>	
High Readers	17.92	2.27	16.64	3.30	
Low Readers	13.46	4.50	12.46	3.79	
Boys	15.20	4.42	14.70	2.74	
Girls	16.18	3.94	14.40	3.36	

of the High Header group was approximately four and one-half points higher than the Low Readers on Form 1 and slightly more than four points higher on Form 2. The girls outperformed the boys on Form 1 by about one point but the scores were nearly equal on Form 2.

<u>TAR-MC</u>, Form 1. A significant difference was demonstrated by the analysis in relation to reader level with the High Readers surpassing the Low Readers (F. = 19.20, df. = 1/95, p < .001). There were no significant differences noted for sex (F. = .34, df. = 1/95, n.s.) or interaction between reader level and sex (F. = .86, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

TAR-MC, Form 2. The results indicate that High Readers again significantly exceeded the Low Reader's mean score on Form 2 (F. = 16.04, df. = 1/95, p  $\langle$  .001). Also, sex difference did not prove to be significant (F. = 1.87, df. = 1/95, n.s.). The analysis did not indicate any significant interaction (F. = .00, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

#### Summary

The findings indicate that High Readers consistently scored higher than Low Readers on the TAR-C and TAR-MC regardless of whether the number of antecedents in the discourse is two or four. It appears that neither number of antecedents nor the testing format (cloze and multiple choice) affects this superiority of high achieving readers.

The results showed that sex was not a significant factor in relation to performance on the 1AR-C and TAR-MC. Interaction effects were only noted in one instance (TAR-C, Form 1). Here, the girls from the High Reader group outperformed the boys from the High Reader group but the opposite was true in the case of Low Readers.

Therefore, Hypothesis 6.1 must be rejected on the basis of the

statistical analyses carried out on the data.

Differences between High and low Reader's Ability to Comprehend the Antecedent/Anaphora Relationship when the Effects of Distance between Antecedent and Anaphora Are Considered

Pollowing the review of literature, the second question focused on the effects of distance between the antecedent and anaphora. The literature indicated that distance may be a factor affecting the comprehension of this relationship. Hypothesis 6.2 was used to examine the ability of High and Low Readers when the distance factor was considered.

### Hypothesis 6.2

There will be no significant difference in the performance of High and Low Readers on the TAR-C and TAR-MC when the distance between the antecedent is 0-2 propositions or 3-5 propositions.

As in the case of Hypothesis 6.1, a two-way analysis of covariance was used to test Hypothesis 6.2. The covariate was word recognition.

On the TAR-C, twenty items reflected the 0-2 proposition distance and an equal number of items represented the 3-5 proposition length factor. The TAR-FD contained ten items for each of the distance categories.

#### TAR-C, Form 1

The mean scores and standard deviations for the TAR-C, Form 1 (0-2 Propositions) and TAR-C, Form 1 (3-5 Propositions) are reported in Table 6.3.

TAB-C. Form 1 (O-2 Fromositions). The mean score of the High  $\bigcirc$ Eeaders proved to be significantly higher than that of the Low Readers

#### TABLE 6.3

MEAN DOORED AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF DISTANCE - FACTOR RETWEEN ANTECEDENT AND ANATHORA FOR THE TAR-C, FORM 1, BY REALER LEVEL AND DEX (N=100)

	TAR-C, F (0-2 Propor		TAR-C, Form 1 (3-5 Fropositions)	
Group	Mean	а антана (),	Pean	S.D.
High Readers	15.77	2.1教	25.30	2.43
Low Readers	13.40	3-42	11.72	3.93
воуз	14.94	3.14	13.35	3.67
Girls	15.20	3.51	14.06	4.21

(F. = 14.61, df. = 1/95,  $p \le .001$ ). No difference was noted between the sexes (F. = 1.35, df. = 1/95, n.s.). Significant interaction effects were found between reader level and sex (F. = 4.28, df. = 1/95, p. < .05). The interaction is shown in Figure 6.2.

Figure 6.2 portrays High Readers who are girls as superior to High Readers who are boys, however, Low Readers who were boys outscored Low Readers who were girls. This pattern of interaction is similar to that encountered on the TAR-C, Form 1 when the number of antecedents was being considered.

<u>TAR-C. Form 1 (3-5 Propositions</u>). While the scores of all the groups dropped when the number of propositions intervening between the antecedent and anaphora increased, the superiority of the High Readers over the Low Readers continued (F. = 14.21, df. = 1/95, p < .001). There was no significant difference in the performance of boys and girls (F. = .07, df. = 1/95, n.s.). Interaction did not reach significance (F. =

#### FIGURE 6...

INTERACTION ESTWEED READER LEVEL AND DEX ON TARGE, FORM 1 (0-2 PHOPOGITIONED) (N 100)



1.26, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

### TAR-C, Form 2

The distance factor was again tested using the TAR-O, Form 2. Distance factor mean scores and standard deviations are presented in Table 6.4.

<u>TAR-C. Form 2 (0-2 Propositions</u>). The two-way analysis of covariance indicated that Low Headers scored lower than High Readers on the TAR-C, Form 2 (0-2 Propositions) (F. = 13.08, df. = 1/95, p  $\langle$ .001). There was no significant difference between the means of the sexes (F. = 1.91, df. = 1/95, n.s.). The analysis did not reveal any interaction effects (F. = 1.44, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

### TABLE 6.4.

HEAN COORES AND STANLARD DEVIATIONS OF DISTANCE FACTOR PETWEEN ANTECEDENT AND ANALHORA FOR THE TAR C. FORM 2. MY READER DEVEL AND G.A. (N. 100).

	TARC, F (O-2 Propor	(	TAR C, Morris 5 Propositions,		
$\delta \in \mathcal{D}(O^{*}(\mathbb{F}))$	Heren I.	· · / ·		N 41 ( T)	<b>1</b> , , , ,
Pippoline in m		ين يو. يو يو			
kow headers	1.2.10	3 - 54		11.34.	5-24
ioya	13.14	5 - 244		13.12	e de la
Girla	14.78	3 - 43		14,208	` <b>,</b> ` .

TAN-0, Fort a (1-5 Propositions). The seen scores of the bien Leaders surpassed those of the Low Headers by a significant margin (P. = 35.98, df. - 1/95, p < .001). The finding of no significant difference in relation to sex was consistent with the TAR-0, Form 2 (0-2 Propositions) (F. = 0.44, df. = 1/95, n.s.). Interaction effects were not recorded (F. = 0.11, df. = 1.95, n.s.).

### Sumary

The findings in relation to the distance factor on the TAR-C indicate section setent superiority favoring high headers over how concers. Thus, in reference to the TAR-C, Forms 1 and 2. Hypothesis 5.2 must be rejected. No sex differences were evident in the analysis although one case of significant interaction was reported. This occurred on the TAR-C, Form 1 (O-2 Propositions). The interaction indicated that girl High Readers scored higher than boy High Readers.

An opposite affect was recorded in the case of the low boulers with the boys scoring algorithmathy higher than the girls.

TAR MU, YOTH 1

The distance factor scores for Form 1 were computed and the means and standard deviations are found in Table 5.1. The highest score obtainable on this measure was ten.

Talls out

MEAN COORDE AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF FILTANCE FACTOR DETWEEN ANTEOBLENT AND ANAPHERA FOR THE TAR-MO, FORM ... BY READER LEVEL AND OR (MALAN)

	TAR-MI, Form 1 (0-2 Propositions)		TAR-SU, Form 1 (3-5 Dropositions	
Group	Maan	<u>0.2.</u>	Mean	
High Readers	8.86	1.33	9.04	1.11
Low Readers	6.64	2 - 2+ 5	6.80	en e
Боуз	7.54 -	2.36	7.04	na anti- Na anti-Ara
Girla	7.96	2.15	8.20	<b>.</b>

<u>TAR-MC. Form 1 (0-2 Propositions)</u>. The two-way analysis of covariance showed a significant main effect with the High Readers scoring higher than the Low Readers (F. = 13.90, df. = 1/95. p < .001). No significant sax difference was evident in the analysis (F. = 0.07, df. = 1/95, r.s.). Also, interaction effects were not present (F. = 0.144, df. = 1.95, r.s.).

TAR-MO, Form 1 (3-5 Propositions). The difference between the

mean scores obtained by the reader groups was significant with the High Readers continuing to outscore the Low Readers (F. = 18.76, df. = 1/95, p < .001). The analysis did not indicate any sex difference (F. = 0.71, df. = 1/95, n.s.). Interaction effects were not in evidence (F. = 0.85, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

### TAR-MC, Form 2

The multiple choice format was analyzed for the distance factor in a manner similar to the other TAR. The highest possible score on this measure was ten. Table 6.6 presents the mean scores and standard deviations for the TAR-MC, Form 2.

### TABLE 6.6

MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF DISTANCE FACTOR HETWEEN ANTECEDENT AND ANAPHORA FOR THE TAR-MC, FORM 2, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)

	TAR-MC, (0-2 Propo	Form 2 sitions)	TAR-MC, Form 2 (3-5 Propositions)	
Group	Mean	S.D.	Mean	S.D.
High Readers	8.46	1.72	8.18	1.82
Low Readers	6.52	2.08	5.92	2.01
Boys	7.62	3.98	7.05	2.22
Girls	7.36	2.06	7.04	2.37

The mean scores indicated that Low Readers scored lower than High Readers on the instrument while boys slightly outscored girls. The statistical device used to examine the differences in the means was a two-way analysis of covariance. The covariate was word recognition. <u>TAR-MC</u>, Form 2 (0-2 Propositions). Main effects were found for reader level with High Readers producing higher scores than the Low Readers (F. = 9.13, df. = 1/95, p < .001). Although the boys scored slightly higher than the girls, the difference did not prove to be significant (F. = 3.48, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

<u>TAR-MC</u>, Form 2 (3-5 Propositions). The High Readers continued to score significantly higher than the Low Readers (F. = 18.30, df. = 1/95, p  $\langle .001 \rangle$ . No significant findings were obtained for sex (F. = 0.46, df. = 1/95, n.s.), nor were there any significant interaction effects present (F. = 0.00, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

#### Summary

Hypothesis 6.2 was rejected on the basis of the analysis. The accres of the High Readers significantly exceeded those of the Low Readers on both forms of the TAR. This superiority was maintained whether the distance was 0-2 or 3-5 propositions intervening between antecedent and anaphora.

The two-way analyses of covariance did not disclose any sex differences in the mean scores of the boys and girls nor was any significant interaction noted.

Differences between High and Low Reader's Ability to Comprehend the Antecedent/Anaphora Relationship when the Effects of Anaphoric Category Are Considered

The literature has indicated that the case of personal pronouns may be an interfering factor for some children in comprehending the antecedent/anaphora relationship. In this study the TAR-C and TAR-FE contained three anaphoric categories which have been typically referred to as the nominative, objective, and genitive case. Since these categories were built into the passages used for the TAR, individual scores could be recorded in relation to each of the categories. Previous work has indicated that certain cases may be more difficult than others for beginning readers.

Hypothesis 6.3 was formulated to examine the abilities of High and Low Readers when the effects of anaphoric category are considered.

### Hypothesis 6.3

There will be no significant difference in the performance of High and Low Readers on the TAR-C and on the TAR-MC in relation to Category 1 (Nominative case), Category 2 (Objective case), and Category 7 (Ganitive case).

TAR-C, Form 1

The cloze form of the TAR contained à total of forty items. Of this total twenty-four items reflected Category 1, eight items Category 2, and eight items Category 7. As in the case of the previous analyses, the two-way analysis of covariance was employed to determine if the difference between the means were significant. The mean scores and standard deviations for Categories 1, 2, and 7 on TAR-C, Form 1 are depicted in Table 6.7. Table 6.7 indicates that the High Readers achieved higher mean scores than the Low Readers in all categories. The scores of the girls are slightly higher than those of the boys in the three categories.

<u>TAR-C. Form 1 (Category 1)</u>. The difference between the means of the High Readers and the Low Readers proved to be significant (F. = 9.64, df. = 1/95,  $p^{\circ}$ <.001). Although no significant sex difference was

### TABLE 6.7

MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF ANAPHORIC CATEGORIES ON THE TAR-C, FORM 1, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)

		Form 1TAR-C, Form 1°gory 1)(Category 2)		TAR-C, Form 1 (Category 7)		
Group	Mean	S.D.	Mean ·	S.D.	Mean	S.D.
High Readers	20.05	2.81	6.02	1./44°	6.30	1.39
Low Readers	16.22	4.40	4.32	1.94	4.56	1.78
Boys	18.12	3.89	5.04	1.85	5.16	1.75
Girls	<b>18.</b> 16	4.33	5.30	1.96	5.70	1.84

noted (F. = 3.02, df. = 1/95, n.s.), interaction effects were found to be present (F. = 4.97, df. = 1/95,  $p \le .05$ ). The interaction between reading group and sex is illustrated in Figure 6.3. This Figure shows

FIGURE 6.3

INTERACTION BETWEEN READER LEVEL AND SEX ON TAR-C, FORM 1 (CATEGORY 1) (N=100)



that High Readers who were girls scored higher than boys. In the case of Low Readers, the boys scored significantly higher than the girls. The interaction pattern depicted in Figure 6.3 is the same as that found on the other TAR that demonstrated interaction effects.

<u>TAR-C.</u> (Form 1 (Category 2). The findings in relation to this variable continued to show the significantly higher performance of the High Reader group over the Low Readers (F. = 8.76, df. = 1/95, p < .01). As in the case of Category 1, no sex difference was indicated by the analysis (F. = 0.03, df. = 1/95, n.s.). However, unlike Category 1, interaction effects were not observed (F. = .84, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

<u>TAR-C. Form 1 (Category 7)</u>. The pattern of findings was not changed by the genitive case variable. The difference between the means of the High and Low Reader groups was highly significant with the superiority favoring the High Readers (F. = 11.47, df. = 1/95, p < .001). Evidence of sex difference was not found (F. = .69, df. = 1/95, n.s.), nor was any significant interaction indicated (F. = 0.01, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

### Summary

The cloze form TAR yielded results that were similar to established patterns of performance. Significant main @fects were observed with High Readers consistently scoring higher than Low Readers on all anaphoric categories. No sex differences were found and only one instance of significant interaction. The interaction indicated that High Readers who were girls scored higher than boys who were High Readers while the Low Readers who were boys produced scores that were significantly higher than those of the girls in the Low Reader group.

### TAR\_C, Form 2

Hypothesis 6.3 was also tosted on the TAR-C, Form 2 by means of a two-way analysis of covariance. As in Form 1, Form 2 reflected all of the anaphoric categories under study. The proportions of the categories were the same in both forms. The highest score attainable on Category 1 (Nominative) was twenty-four, while a score of eight was possible on Category 2 (Objective) and Category 7 (Genitive). Table 6.8 reveals the mean scores and standard deviations for the sample in relation to the anaphoric categories.

#### TABLE 6.8

MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF ANAPHORIC CATEGORIES ON THE TAR-C, FORM 2, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)

	TAR-C, (Catego	TAR-C, Form 2. (Category 1)		TAR-C, Form 2 (Category 2)		TAR-C, Form 2 (Category 7)	
Group	Mean	S.D.	Mean	S.D.	Mean	S.D.	
High Readers	20.00	2.89	6.32	1.22	4.90	1.39	
Low Readers	14.68	4.31	5.16	1.77	3.58	1.46	
Воуз	16.76	4.46	5.54	1.59	4.00	1.41	
Girls	17.92	4.55	5.96	1.63	4.48	168	

The data show that High Reader's scores exceeded those of Low Readers. Slight differences are noted for the means of the sexes with girls maintaining a superiority over the boys.

<u>TAR-C. Form 2 (Category 1)</u>. As would be expected by the means shown in Table 6.8, the two-way analysis of covariance revealed a signifi- cant difference in the case of the reader group (F. = 30.10, df. = 1/95,
p < .001). There was no significant difference between the mean scores of the sexes (F. = .66, df. = 1/95, n.s.). No finding of interaction was disclosed by the analysis (F. = 0.10, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

<u>TAR-C, Form 2 (Category 2)</u>. The objective case mean scores did not differ significantly in respect to reader level (F. = 3.15, df. = 1/95, n.s.). Although this was the first incidence of High Readers not performing significantly higher than Low Readers, the findings approached the .05 level of confidence. Sex difference was not evident in the analysis (F. = 0.27, df. = 1/95, n.s.). No interaction between reader group and sex was noted (F. = 0.17, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

<u>TAR-C. Form 2 (Category 7)</u>. Reader level scores differed significantly on this measure with High Readers surpassing the Low Readers (F. = 10.39, df. = 1/95, p < .01). Although no sex difference was observed (F. = 1.42, df. = 1/95, n.s.), significant interaction effect occurred (F. = 5.37, df. = 1.95, p < .05). The interaction effects are shown in Figure 6.4. As in the case of the other variables that demonstrated interaction effects, the High Readers (girls) scored higher than the boys who were High Readers but Low Readers (boys) were superior to girls who were Low Readers.

#### Sumary

Differences between scores on Category 2 (Objective case), as tested by the cloze format, produced the first incidence of no significant main effects for reader level. There is no obvious explanation why this result differed from previous findings. It must be remembered, however, that the level of significance did approach acceptability. The analysis did not reveal any change in pattern in reference to the other





categories, that is, High Readers scored higher than Low Readers.

Main effects for sex were not found in any of the analyses. One case of significant interaction (Category 7) was noted. The product of this interaction was the same as earlier observed in other analyses. The data showed that girls who are High Readers scored higher than boys who are High Readers. In the case of Low Readers the superiority was reversed.

Thus, Hypothesis 3A is accepted in the case of Category 2 but rejected for Categories 1 and 7.

#### TAR-MC, Form 1

The multiple choice format of the TAR reflected the three

anaphoric categories in the same proportions as the TAR-C. The highest possible score on Category 1 was twolve while a maximum score of four was attainable on Categories 2 and 7. Table 6.9 reports the mean scores and standard deviations on TAR-MC, Form 1 for the three anaphoric categories under study. Table 6.9 indicates that High Readers scored nearly

#### TABLE 6.9

MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF ANAPHORIC CATEGORIES ON

THE TAR-MC, FORM 1, BY REALER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)

	TAR-MC, (Categ	Form 1 ory 1):	TAR-MC (Cate	, Form 1 gory 2)	TAR-MC. (Categ	, Form 1 gory 7)
Group	Mean	S.D.	Mean	S.D.	Mean	S.D.
High Readers	10.94	1.33	3.60	0.70	3.38	0.83
Low Readers	8.26	2.81	2.78	1,28	2.46	1.22
Boys	9-40	2.73	3.08	1.21	2.76	1.15
Girls	9.80	2.40	3.30	1.00	3.08	1.10

two points higher than Low Readers in Category 1 and approximately one point higher in Categories 2 and 7. The difference in mean scores (on all three anaphoric categories) between boys and girls did not appear to be great. A two-way analysis of covariance was conducted to stermine the significance of the difference between the means.

<u>TAR-MC</u>, Form 1 (Category 1). Main effects were found for reader level on this measure (F. = 17.71, df. = 1/95, p  $\leq$  .001). The analysis did not reveal any sex difference (F. = 0.01, df. = 1/95, n.s.), nor was any significant interaction present (F. = 0.14, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

TAR-MC, Form 1 (Category 2). Highly significant findings were

129

evident in the analysis for Category 2 with the High Reader group once again maintaining its superiority in performance (F. = 17.61, df. = 1/95, p < 0.001). Sex grouping produced no significant main effects (F. = 1.32, df. = 1/95, n.s.). In addition, interaction between reader level and sex was not present (F. = 0.18, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

<u>TAR-MC</u>, Form 1 (Category 7). Established patterns of performance were continued on this measure of the genitive case variable. Although the level of significance was not as high as that on Categories 1 and 2, High Reader's scores exceeded those of the Low Reader group by a significant margin (F. = 8.12, df. = 1/95, p < .01). The mean scores of the boys and girls did not differ in any significant degree (F. = 0.96, df. = 1/95, n.s.). Interaction effects were not in evidence (F. = 0.89, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

#### Summary

The results of the two-way analysis indicated that Hypothesis 6.3 must be rejected in the case of reader level. On all three categories, the High Readers scored significantly higher than the Low Readers. Thus, the non-rejection of Hypothesis 6.3 is proven untenable.

No significant main effects were recorded for the sex grouping and interaction effects were absent for all variables tested.

#### TAR-NO, Form 2

In Form 2 of the TAR-MC, anaphoric categories were represented in the same ratio as the other TAR. As in the case of Form 1 the highest possible scores attainable were twelve (Category 1) and four (Category 2 and 7). The mean scores and standard deviations of each group on the TAR-MC, Form 2 are given in Table 6.10. The High Reader group scored higher on all three anaphoric categories. Although the boys outscored the girls on two of the categories the difference was not significant. The level of significance was determined by the two-way analysis of covariance. As with all the other analyses, the covariate was the children's word recognition scores.

#### TABLE 6.10

# MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF ANAPHORIC CATEGORIES ON THE TAR-MC, FORM 2, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=100)

	TAR-HC, (Catego	Form 2 ory 1	TAR-MC, (Categ	Form 2 Jory 2)	TAR-MC, (Categ	Form 2 (ory 7)
Group	Mean	S.D.	Mean	S.D.	Mean	S.D.
High Readers	10.38	2.13	3.16	0.89	3.00	0.97
Low Readers	7.84	2.49	2.16	1.08	2.46	1.13
Boys	9.28	2.64	2.56	1.13	2.76	1.02
Girls	8.94	2.66	2.76	1.08	2.70	1.15

<u>TAR-MC. Form 2 (Category 1)</u>. The difference between the means of the nominative case variable was significant at a high level of confidence. The High Reader group was once again dominant (F. = 12.06, df. = 1/95, p  $\leq$  .001). In comparing the sexes, the level of significance approached, but did not reach acceptability (F. = 3.61, df. = 1/95, n.s.). No interaction effects were observed (F. = 0.03, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

<u>TAR-MC. Form 2 (Cat for 2)</u>. The objective case category produced no change from establiched patterns of performance. The High Readers outperformed the Low Readers by a considerable margin (F. = 14.17, df. = 1/95, p < .001). Sex difference did not approach an acceptable level of confidence (F. = 0.34, df. = 1/95, n.s.) and interaction effects were not indicated by the analysis (F. = 0.00, df. = 1/95, n.s.).

TAR-MC. Form  $\leq$  (Category 7). Category 7 produced the only situation where the difference between the means of the reader groups was not significant (F. = 2.75, df. = 1/95, n.s.). Neither sex (F. = 0.35, df. = 1/95, n.s.), nor interaction effects (F. = 0.27, df. = 1/95, n.s.) proved to be significant.

#### Summary

On two categories (Categories 1 and 2) the High Readers scored significantly higher than Low Readers. However, on Category 7 there was no significant difference between the means of the reader levels. It must be pointed out that the level of significance did approach the acceptable .05 level.

As with the other multiple choice format TAR, no sex differences were noted, nor was any significant interaction between reader level and sex observed.

According to the results of the analyses, Hypothesis 6.3 cannot be rejected in the case of the TAR-MD, Form 2 (Category 7), but is rejected for the other two anaphoric categories.

The Effects of Number of Antecedents on Subjects' Ability to Comprehend the Antecedent/Anaphora Relations is

In the previous analysis the focus has been on the reader and sex groups and score differences within these groups over a number of variables. In this, and the following sections, all subjects are taken as a single group and the effects of the dependent variable, are examined. The distinctions of reader level and sex are used in the analyses but not in direct comparison with each other.

The first basic question to be studied is the increased number of antecedents in a discourse and the effects of this increase on the subjects' performance in comprehending the antecedent/anaphora relationship.

The review of literature has indicated that an increase in the number of antecedents would cause readers more difficulty in comprehending the antecedent/anaphora relationship. While the previous analyses indicated that High Readers typically score higher than Low Readers, regardless of whether the number of antecedents was two or four, the question next explored was whether all groups of readers produce lower scores on the TAR when the number of antecedents is increased.

Hypothesis 6.4 was formulated to test this question.

#### Hypothesis 6.4

There will be no significant difference in the subject's scores when the means of TAR-C, Form 1 (2 antecedents) are compared with TAR-C, Form 2 (4 antecedents).

To test Hypothesis 6.4, which compared the means of tests (not reader groups or sexes) t-tests were used. The means and standard deviations of the TAR-C, Forms 1 and 2 can be found in Table 6.1. The results of the t-tests are shown in Table 6.11.

The findings of this table indicate that the increase in number of antecedents does affect the performance of the subjects. The performance of the High Reader group was the most significantly changed by the increase in antecedents (p = .0004) followed closely by the boys (p = -0005). The approximitely two point decline in the performance of the Low Reader group could not be attributed to chance  $(p \approx .0092)$  nor could the nearly one point difference of the girls  $(p \approx .0276)$ .

#### TABLE 6.11

t-TEST VALGES FOR TAR-C, FORM 1 (2 ANTECHDENTE) VERSUS

FORM 2 (L ANTECEDERT: ) FOR THE DOTAL SAMPLE (S 100)

TAR-C, Form 1 with TAR-C, Form 2

G <b>rou</b> y	<u>t</u>	11	Erobarility
High Renders	3.80	49	
Low Readers	2.71	49	.0092
Воув	3.66	2 Q **	.0006
Girls	2.28	49	.0270

The results of the t-tests conclusively show that an increase in the number of antecedents interacting throughout a discourse significantly affects the performance of the grade two readers. Therefore, Hypothesis 5.4 must be rejected.

Referring back to the question in focus, a second hypothesis was constructed, using the TAR-NE, Forms 1 and 2 as the testing vehicle.

#### Hypothesis 5.5

There will be no simificant difference in the subjects? scores when the means of the TAR-MD; Form 1 (2 antecedents) are compared with TAR-SD; Form 2 (4 antecedents).

Again, t-tests were applied to the data. The means and standard deviations of the TAR-MC, Forms 1 and 2 may be viewed in Table 0.2. The results of the t-tests are depicted in Table 5.12.

The addition of two antecedents to the TAR-MD, as in the case

#### TABLE 6.12

t-TEST VALUES FOR TAR-MC, FORM 1 (2 ANTECEDENTS) VERSUS.

FORM 2 (4 ANTECEDENTS) FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE (N=100)

TAR.MC, Form 1 with TAR-MC, Form 2

Group	Ť	df	Probability
High Readers	3.52	49	•0009
Low Readers	2.01	49	.0495
Воуз	1.50	49	.1402
Girls	3.55	49	.0009

of Form 2, made the test significantly more difficult for the High Readers. The level of significance was nearly as high as that for the TAR-C comparison (p = .0009). This finding indicates that High Reader's scores are depressed by the addition of antecedents on both the cloze and multiple choice formats.

While the level of significance was not as great as that found on the TAR-C comparison, Low Readers did score significantly lower on the TAR-MC, Form 2 (p = .0495). Therefore, the results indicate that number of antecedents lowers the mean scores of the Low Reader group regardless of format.

In relation to the sexes, the difference between the mean scores of the girls proved to be highly significant (p = .0009). The confidence level was higher than that noted on the TAR-C comparison for the readers who were girls.

In the case of the readers who were boys, the level of confidence did not reach an adequate level (p = .1402). No apparent explana-

 $\odot$ 

tion is available for this finding since the number of antecedents did prove to affect comprehension scores on the TAR-C for the Loys.

#### Summary

The analysis of the data indicates that Hypothesis 6.5 must be rejected in all but one instance. The scores of the readers who were boys did not differ significantly on the Form 1 versus Form 2 comparison of the TAR-MC and thus, Hypothesis 6.5 cannot be rejected in this instance. On the whole, the evidence indicates that increasing the number of antecedents in a discourse does interfere with the reader's comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship.

The Effects of Distance on Subjects' Ability to Comprehend the Antecedent/Anaphora Relationship

Previous research has indicated that increasing the distance between antecedent and anaphora would correspondingly decrease comprehension of the relationship that exists between the two elements. Because of the planned construction of the passages and TAR, four separate analyses were possible--one for each form of the TAR-C and TAR-MC in which scores for 0-2 propositions are compared with scores for 3-5 propositions as the distance factor between antecedent and anaphora.

The comparisons made in these analyses focused on the effects the variable in question (distance) had on the scores of all the subjects. The hypothesis that was devised to examine the distance variable was composed as follows:

#### Hypothesis 6.6

There will be no significant difference in the subjects?

scores when the means of the TAR-C, Form 1 (0-2 Propositions) are compared with TAR-C, Form 1 (3-5 Propositions).

Analysis was performed by applying t-tests to the data to determine whether or not the difference between the mean scores was significant. Table 6.3 shows the mean scores and standard deviations for the TAR-C, Form 1 (0-2 Propositions and 3-5 Propositions). The results of the t-tests are reported in Table 6.13.

#### TABLE 6.13

t-TEST VALUES FOR TAR-C, FORM 1 (0-2 FROPOSITIONE) VERSUS

· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·		5.			
Group °°	<u> </u>	<u>.</u>	df		Probability
High Readers	3.80	·	Å9 <sub>2</sub> 1		.0024
Low Readers	<b>4.30</b> e	o	49	۰ ۰	
Boys	<b>4.16</b> °	. 0	49	1. 1. 1.	° .0001
Girls	3.35		49	 	.0016

TAR-C, Form 1

(0-2 Propositions versus 3-5 Propositions)

The distance increase, in terms of number of propositions, proved to be a highly significant variable in the understanding of the antecedent/anaphora relationship for all groups included in the sample. The approximately one point decrease in the scores of the High Readers was significant at the .0024 level of confidence while the lower mean score on Form 2 for the Low Readers was even more significant (p = .0001). The loss in comprehension for the readers who were girls was significant (p = .0016) as was the situation for the boys (p = .0001).

There was no support found for Hypothesis 6.6 since all groups

<u>بر</u>

scored at a significantly lower level when the distance between antecedent and anaphora was increased on the TAR-C, Form 1. Thus, Hypothesis 6.6 is rejected.

Hypothesis 6.7 was formulated to test the distance factor on TAR-C, Form 2.

#### Hypothesis 6.7

There will be no significant difference in subjects' scores when the means of the TAR-C, Form 2 Propositions) are compared with TAR-C, Form 2 (3-5 Propositions).

As with Hypothesis 6.6, t-tests were used to ascertain the level of significant difference between the means of the two scores for each group of readers. Means and standard deviations for each group can be found in Table 6.4. The results of the t-tests are given in Table 6.14.

#### TABLE 6.14

t-TEST VALUES FOR TAR-C, FORM 2 (0-2 PROPOSITIONS) VERSUS

(3-5 PROPOSITIONS) FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE (N=100)

e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e		Versus 3-5	propositions)	
Group	T		df	Probability
High Readers	-0.93	,	49	.3585
Low Readers	2.18		49	.0339
Воув	0.05		49	.9626
Girls	1.18	7	49	.2434

TAR-C, Form 2 (0-2 Propositions versus 3-5 Propositions)

The results on the TAR-C, Form 2 were quite surprising, especially in the case of the High Readers. The mean score of this group was actually higher when the distance between antecedent and anaphora was increased. However, the difference was not significant. The increased distance did significantly affect the performance of Low  $2e^{-1}e^$ 

The difference between the means for the boy and girl readers did not approach the acceptable level of confidence. This finding is different from the results noted on the TAR-C; Form 1.

The results of the analysis indicate that Hypothesis 6.7 cannot be rejected for High Readers, boys, and girls. The Hypothesis is rejected in the case of the Low Readers since the difference between the means reached the level of .05.

To test the distance factor on the TAR-MC, Form 1, Hypothesis 6.8 was used.

Hypothesis 6.8

There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores when the means of the TAR-ME, Form 1 (0-2 Propositions) are compared with TAR-ME, Form 1 (3-5 Propositions).

Using the multiple choice format of the TAR, the distance factor was again tested by means of t-tests. The means for the sample are reported in Table 6.5 while the results of the t-tests are shown in Table 6.15.

On the TAR-ME, Form 1 the increased distance did not prove to be a significant factor in the comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship. All groups had negative T values since the mean scores favored the 3-5 proposition distance. This finding is unexpected in light of the speculations of previous writers (Mosberg and Shima, 1969; Harris, 1948). Possible explanations for the findings on the TAR-ME, Form 1 will be discussed in Chapter 8.

On the basis of the t-tests, which were used to evaluate the difference between the means in relation to<sup>0</sup> the distance factor, Hypothesis 6.8 cannot be rejected.

#### **TABLE 6.15**

t-TEST VALUES FOR TAR-MC, PIRM 1 (0-2 PROPOSITIONS) VERSUS

(3-5 PROPOSITIONS) FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE (N=100)

TAR-MC, Form 1 (0-2 Propositions versus 3-5 Propositions)

High Readers         -1.35         49         .182           Low Readers         -0.67         49         .507           Boys         -0.46         19         .507	lity
Borre	
Borre	; 4
-0.46 .651	
Girls -1.47 49 .147	

To test Form 2 of the TAR-MC, Hypothesis 6.9 was devised. Hypothesis 6.9

There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores when the means of the TAR-MC, Form 2 (0-2 Propositions) are compared with TAR-MC, Form 2 (3-5 Propositions).

The final hypothesis testing the distance factor used the TAR-MC, Form 2. This form contained four antecedents and used the multiple choice format. Table 6.6 displays the means and standard deviations for the sample and the t-test comparisons are shown in Table 6.16.

TAR-MC, Form 2 produced mixed findings in relation to the effects of the distance factor on comprehension of the antecedent/ anaphora relationship. The comprehension of the Low Reader group was significantly affected by the increased distance as was the group of readers who were boys. The actual levels of confidence were .0058 (Low Readers) and .0118 (boys) respectively. Although the scores of the High Readers and girls were lower when the intervening number of propositions was increased the level of confidence did not reach a sufficient

#### TABLE 6.16

t-TEST VALUES FOR TAR-MC, FORM 2 (0-2 PROPOSITIONS) VERSUS (3-5 PROPOSITIONS) FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE (N=100)

TAR-MC, Form 2 (0-2 Propositions versus 3-5 Propositions)

Group	T	df	Probability
High Readers	1.55	49	.1279
Low Readers	2.89	49	.0058
Boys	2.62	49	.0118
Girls	1.83	49	.0733

level to reject Hypothesis 6.9. In both cases the significance level approached the .05 level of acceptability.

Hypothesis 6.9 was rejected for both Low Readers and boys, the Hypothesis cannot be rejected for High Readers and girls.

#### Summary

The effects of distance on the comprehension of the antecedent/ anaphora relationship were examined by means of t-tests on the mean scores of the subjects. The results of these analyses were mixed. Hypotheses 6.6, 6.7, 6.8, and 6.9 were devised to test the subjects ability to comprehend the antecedent/anaphora relationship when the effects of distance were considered. The analyses of the data indicated that Hypothesis 6.6 was rejected, 6.7 was rejected only in the case of the Low Readers (but could not be rejected for the other readers), 6.8 was not rejected, and Hypothesis 6.9 was rejected for both Low Readers and boys but could not be rejected for High Readers and girls.

The Low Readers were the group most affected by the increase

in distance between antecedent and anaphora. Only on the TAR-MC, Form 1 did the difference between the mean scores not significantly decrease due to the effects of increased distance between antecedent and anaphora.

The distance factor, typically, did not seem to be an interforing element in comprehending the antecedent/anaphora relationship for the High Readers. Only on the TAR-C, Form 1 did the decrease in scores reach significance.

The performance of the readers who were boys was decidedly mixed. A significant decrease in scores was noted on the TAR-C, Form 1 and the TAR-MC, Form 2. On the other two TAR, the difference between the means did not reach an acceptable level of confidence.

As in the case of the High Readers, the scores of the girls were only slightly affected by the increase in distance. The mean scores of this group only differed significantly on the TAR-C, Form 1. It is interesting to note that TAR-C, Form 1 was the only TAR to affect the scores of all groups.

The tentative conclusion that can be reached at this time is that Low Readers do indeed appear to suffer a decrease in comprehension because of the increased distance between anaphora and antecedent. However, the effects of distance on the comprehension of other groups of readers is not clear. The findings concerning this factor will be discussed in Chapter 8.

The Effects of Anaphoric Category on Subjects? Ability to Comprehend the Antecedent/Anaphora Relationship

It was indicated by the review of relevant literature that for some readers the understanding of the antecedent/anaphora relationship

142

may be related to the surface structure case of the anaphora. This variable was reflected (in this study) as the anaphoric category.

The effects of anaphoric category on performance of the entire sample was examined via a one-way analysis of variance with repeated measures. If the analysis indicated a significant difference between the means of the categories, the Scheffe procedure was used to test the difference. This test is quite conservative and minimizes the effect of Type One errors.

Hypothesis 6.10 was formulated to test the subjects' ability to comprehend the antecedent/anaphora relationship when the effects of anaphoric category are considered.

#### Hypothesis 6.10

There will be no significant difference in the subjects? scores in relation to Category 1 (Nominative case), Category 2 (Objective case), and Category 7 (Genitive case) on the TAR-C, Form 1.

The means and standard deviations for the anaphoric categories are shown in Table 6.7. Since the categories did not occur in equal proportions, it was necessary to take this into account when analyzing the data.

Table 6.17 portrays the significant findings on TAR-C, Form 1 in relation to the anaphoric categories.

For all groups of readers Category 2 (Objective case) proved more difficult than Category 1 (Nominative case). In the comparison of Category 1 with 7, the results were not as clear. Low Readers and boys scored significantly lower on the comparison, however, High Readers and girls did not find the genitive case category more difficult. The comparison of anaphoric Category 2 with 7 did not produce any significant findings.

Hypothesis 6.11 was formulated to test the comparisons on the

#### **TABLE 6.17**

COMPARISONS OF ANAPHORIC CATE? ORIES THAT DIFFER SIGNIFICANTLY,

ON TAR-C, FORM 1, FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE (N 100)

TAR-C. Form 1

Group	Category 1 with 2	Category 1 with 7	Category 2 with 7
High Readers	11111111111111111111111111111111111111	n.3.	n.s.
Low Readers	535		n.s.
Boys	₹°	*	n.s.
Girls	₹	n.s.	n.s.
* aignificant at t	the OS level		

TAR-C, Form 2.

Hypothesis 6.11

There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores in relation to Category (Nominative case), Category 2 (Objective case), and Category 7 (Genitive case) on the TAR-C, Form 2.

Table 6.8 illustrates the mean scores and standard deviations for the anaphoric categories on the TAR-C, Form 2. Significant findings that were obtained in relation to the difference in performance between anaphoric categories are reported in Table 6.18.

The results of all anaphoric category comparisons were quite clear. They were not, however, consistent with comparisons on the TAR-C, Form 1. There was no significant difference in the mean scores of the reader groups when Category 1 and 2 were compared. This was contrary to the findings on TAR-C, Form 1, where Category 2 proved to be more difficult for all readers. The genitive case category (Category 7) continued to be more difficult for the Low Readers and boys.

#### **TABLE 6.18**

### COMPARISONS OF ANAFHORIC CATEGORIES THAT DIFFER SIGNIFICANTLY,

ON TAR-C, FORM 2, FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE (N=1CO)

TAR-C, Form 2

Group	Category 1 with 2	Category 1 with 7	Category 2 with 7
High Readers	n.s.	₩.	₩.
Low Readers	n.s.	¥-	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
Воув	n.3.	· 작	` <b>*</b>
Girls	n.s.	Ť	, <del>' 3</del>
The set of and set of the set of			

\* significant at the .05 level

In addition, High Readers and girls scored significantly lower on the genitive case anaphoric category. The comparison between Categories 2 and 7 was in contrast to the findings on TAR-C, Form 1. All groups found the genitive case more difficult than the objective case category on the TAR-C, Form 2 while no significant difference was noted between the means on TAR-C, Form 1.

To test the effect of the anaphoric category variable on the TAR-MC, Form 1, Hypothesis 6.12 was constructed.

#### Hypothesis 6.12

There will be no significant difference in the subjects: scores in relation to Category 1 (Nominative case), Category 2 (Cojective case), and Category 7 (Genitize case) on the TAR-MC, Form 1.

As with the data generated from the TAR-C, the multiple choice format data were analyzed by a one-way analysis of variance with repeated measures. The analyses took into account the unequal proportions of incidence for the anaphoric categories. If a significant difference was indicated, the statistical procedure attributed to Scheffe, which cllows for comparisons of means, was applied. The .05 level of confidence was considered significant for this analysic

Means and standard deviations for the anaphonic categories are given in Table 6.9. Significant findings, in relation to the difference between the mean scores of the anaphoric categories, are shown in Table 6.19.

#### TABLE 6.19

# COMPARISONS OF ANAPHORIC CATEGORIES THAT DIFFER SIGNIFICANTLY,

ON TAR-ME, FORM 1, FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE (N=100)

Group	Category 1 with 2	Category l with 7	Category 2 with 7
High Readers	n.s.	*	n.s.
Low Readers	n.s.	n.s.	n.s.
Boys	n.s.	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	n.s.
Girls	n.s.	n.s.	n.s.
* significant at t)	he .05 level		11.5.

TAR-MC, Form 1

Only two significant findings were reported on the TAR-MC, Form 1. For both the High Readers and boys, the genitive case anaphoric category proved more difficult than the nominative. The comparison of category 1 with 2 showed no significant differences. This finding is consistent with that on both Form 1 and 2 of the TAR-C. The comparison of category 2 with 7 corresponded with the TAR-C, Form 1, but was in opposition to the findings on the TAR-C. Form 2.

Hypothesis 6.13 was formulated to test the effects of the

anaphoric category variable on the TAR-MC, Form 2.

#### Hypothesia 6.11

There will be no significant difference in the subjects' scores in relation to Category 1 (Nominative case), Category 2 (Objective case), and Category 7 (Genitive case) on the TAR-MC, Form 2.

The mean scores and standard deviations for the anaphoric categories can be viewed on Table 6.10. Comparisons of anaphoric categories that differ significantly are reported in Table 6.20.

#### TABLE 6.20

### COMPARISONS OF ANAPHORIC CATEGORIES THAT DIFFER SIGNIFICANTLY,

ON TAR-MC, FORM 2, FOR THE TOTAL SAMPLE (N=100)

Group	Catagory 1 with 2	Category 1 with 7	Category 2 with 7
High Readers	*	×	n.s.
Low Readers	*	n.s.	n.s.
Boys	*	n.s.	<b>n</b> .s.
Girls	n.s.	n.s.	n.s.
the stand state with the state			

TAR-MC, Form 2

\* significant at the .05 level.

Mixed findings were again evident on the TAR-MD, Form 2. The comparisons of the objective case category with the nominative (Category 1 with 2) proved significant for three of the reader groups (only the comparison for the girls did not prove significant) with the objective case proving more difficult. Also, the genitive case category significantly lowered the scores of the High Readers in comparison with the nominative case. No other significant findings were noted in the analysis.

Summery

Comparisons between the anaphoric categories were made to determine if some categories interfered (more than others) with comparhension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship. The findings indicated that the category representing the genitive case variable was the wat difficult for the readers. Out of a possible sixteen comparisons with Category 1, Category 7 proved to be significantly more difficult is nine instances. Comparing Category 7 with 2, the findings indicated that Category 7 scores (for various groups of readers) were significantly lower four times. Comparisons between the other anaphoric categories were inconclusive.

The Low Readers were the group most affected by the anaphoric categories especially the effects of category ". These findings will be discussed fully in Chapter 8.

148

#### CHAPTER 7

FINDINGS: ORAL LANGUAGE PRODUCTION OF PRONOUNS AND WRITTEN LA JUAGE. COMPREHENSION OF THE ANTECEDENT/ANAPHORA RELATIONSHIP. TE

RELATIONSHIP OF INTELLIGENCE AND VISUAL MEMORY SPAN TO

COMPREHENSION OF ANTECEDENT AND ANAPHORA

This chapter will discuss the findings concerning oral language production of anaphora and written language concernation of the antecedent/ anaphora relationship as measured by performance on the TAR-C and TAR-MC. In addition, the results of the computations of correlations will be reported for intelligence and visual memory span in relation to comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship.

Two separate analyses were used to examine the relationship between elicited oral language production and comprehension of anteredent and anaphora in written language. First, using the subsample of fortyeight students selected from the total sample of 100, a two-way analysis of variance was carried out to determine if High and Low Readers differed in their production of anaphora. Next, t-tests were used to see if High and Low Anaphora Producers differed significantly in their understanding of the antecedent/anaphora relationship.

Reader Level and the Oral Production of Anaphora

In Chapter 6 it was established that High Readers scored significantly higher on the TAR-C and TAR-MC when the variables of number of antodedents, distance between antecedent and anaphora, and anaphoric category were considered. To examine the question of oral language production of anaphora and reader level, the following hypothesis was formu-

14,9

### Hypothesis 7.1

lated:

There will be no significant difference between High and Low Readers in their oral language production of anaphora.

To determine the total anaphora production, oral language production of all three anaphoric categories (Category 1, 2, and 7) was summed. The statistical procedure used was a two-way analysis of variance with grouping by reader level and sex. The mean totals and standard deviations of the sample on the oral language elicitation task are presented in Table 7.1.

#### TABLE 7.1

MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS FOR ANAPHORA PRODUCTION

IN ORAL LANGUAGE, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=48)

Total Anaphora Hoduction				
Group	Mean			
High Readers	46.58	17.60		
Low Readers	38.58	10.09		
Воув	40.25	14.04		
Girls	44.79	15.40		

Although high achieving readers produced more anaphora than the low readers, and the girls? oral language output indicated more anaphora than the boys, the two-way analysis of variance did not reveal any significant main effects for reader level (F. = 3.657, df. = 1/44, n.s.) or sex (F. = 1.143, df. = 1/44, n.s.). While main effects for reader level were not indicated, the level of probability did approach

#### Total Anaphora Production

ć.

the .05 level of confidence (actual p = .062).

Hypothesis 7.1 cannot be rejected in light of the findings by the two-way-analysis of variance.

The next hypothesis was formulated to examine whether these groups differed in their production of individual anaphoric categories. Hypothesis 7.2 was formulated as follows:

#### Hypothesis 7.2

There will be no significant difference between High and Low Readers in their oral language production of Category 1, Category 2, and Category 7.

Mean production and standard deviations for the three anaphoric categories are shown in Table 7.2.

#### TABLE 7.2

ORAL LANGUAGE PRODUCTION MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS FOR

CATEGORIES 1 ?, AND 7, BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=48)

	Categ	Category 1		Category 2		Category 7	
Group	Mean	S.D.	Mean	S.D.	Mean	S.D.	
High Readers	31.29	12.38	4.71	3.34	9.33	-5.23	
Low Readers	27.21	7-47	4.29	2.82	6.96	3.39 。	
Boyå	27.42	10.15 .	4.17	2.93	7.42	3.48	
Girls	31.08	10.38	4.83	3.22	8.88	5.33	

The statistical treatment of the data indicated no significant main effects for any of the anaphoric categories (Category 1--F. = 1.823, df. = 1/44, n.s.; Category 2--F. = 0.521, df. = 1/44, n.s.; Category 7--F. = 1.243, df. = 1/44, n.s.). Sex difference did not reach statistical significance in any of the analyses (Category 1--F. = 1.823, df. = 1/44, n.s.; Category 2--F. = 0.203, df. = 1/44, n.s.; Category 7--F. = 3.298, df. = 1/44, n.s.). No interaction between reader level and sex was found.

The results of these analyses show that Hypothesis 7.2 cannot be rejected.

The final question examined concerned the relative output of High and Low Readers in terms of ratio of an phora to the total number of words. Hypothesis 7.3 was formulated to explore this question.

#### Hypothesis 7.3

There will be no significant difference between High and Low Readers in their ratio of anaphora to total number of words produced on the oral language task.

Of the three hypotheses formulated to examine the production of anaphora, hypothesis 7.3 is probably the most important. This is because the other analyses were dependent on such factors as sentence length which could affect the total number of words produced. However, in calculating the percentage of total anaphora to total words produced, there is a built-in equalizing effect in terms of the ratio of anaphora produced to total words produced.

Table 7.3 contains the mean percentage and standard deviations of anaphora to total number of words produced on the oral language elicitation task.

Interestingly enough, Low Readers produced a higher percentage of anaphore than High Readers. The difference between the two groups was over one percentage point. The difference between the sexes was only about .40 per cent with girls producing the higher percentage.

The two-way analysis of variance showed that the difference between the reader groups was significant (F. = 4.91, df. = 1/44,

#### TABLE 7.3

### MEAN PERCENTAGES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF ANAPHORA IN RELATION TO TOTAL NUMBER OF WORDS PRODUCED,

#### BY READER LEVEL AND SEX (N=48)

Percentage of Anaphora to Total Number of Words

Group	Mean	S.D.
- High Readers	10.71%	1.58%
Low Readers	11.77%	1.63%
Boys	11.08%	1.57%
Girls	11.47%	1.76%

p  $\langle .05 \rangle$ . No main effects were observed for the sexes (F. = .945, df. = 1/44, n.s.). Significant interaction effects were not present (F. = .232, df. = 1/44, n.s.).

Hypothesis 7.3 was rejected on the basis of the analysis which found a significant difference between the means of the reader groups.

#### Summary

A two-way analysis of variance, with grouping by reader level and sex, was carried out to determine if High Readers differed significantly from Low Readers in their oral language production of anaphora. The oral language production, obtained from an elicitation task, was calculated in several ways. Only in the analysis which considered the percentage of anaphora produced to the total number of words was a significant difference between the means of the reader groups noted. Hypothesis 7.3 was therefore rejected since the approximately one percentage point difference between High and Low Readers was significant at the .05 level of confidence.

The Performinge of High and Low Anaphora Preducers

on the TAR-C and TAR-HC

The selected subsample of students was dichotomized with the dividing point being 11.1 per cent, that is, those subjects who produced 11.1 per cent or more of another in relation to the total number of words were assigned to the High Another's Productes group while the subjects who produced 11.0 per cent or leas were assigned to the Low Another's Produces of the High Another's performance of these groups on the TAR-C and TAR-MC was analyzed to determine if the means differed significantly. The hypothesis formulated to examine the performance of these groups is as follows:

Hypothesis 7-4

There will be no significant difference in the performance of the High and Low Anaphora Producers on the TAR-C and TAR-HC.

Table 7.4 reports the means and standard deviations of the two groups on the TAR-C and TAR-MC. All forms of the TAR-C and TAR-MC were used in the comparisons.

Low Anaphora Producers scored higher than High Anaphora Producers on all TAR-C and TAR-MC. The results of the t-tests which were applied to the data are reported in Table 7.5.

None of the t-test comparisons were significant although one did approach the required level of confidence (TAR-MC, Form 1). Hypothesia 7.4, therefore, cannot be rejected.

#### TABLE 7.4

MEAN SCORES AND STANDARD DEVIATIONS OF HIGH AND LOW ANAPHORA PRODUCERS ON THE TAR-C AND TAR-MC (N=4.8)

	Low Anaphor	Low Anaphora Producers		High Araphora Producers		
Test	Mean	S.D.	Mean	······································	S.D.	
TAR-C, Form 1	29.83	7.35	26.75		6.78	
TAR-C, Form 2	28.75	6.24	26.33		6.55	
TAR-MC, Form 1	16.54	4.21	13.96		5.30	
TAR-MC, Form 2	15.08	4.33	13.71		4.51	

#### TABLE 7.5

t-TEST COMPARISONS FOR THE TAR-C AND TAR-MC\*

RY ORAL LANGUAGE PRODUCTION GROUP (N=48)

	High Anaphora Proc	ow Anaphora Producers
Test		level of significance
TAR-C, Form 1		n.s.
TAR-C, Form 2		Π.8.
TAH-MC, Form 1	х 	n.s.
TAH-MC, Form 2		n.s.

The Relationship between Intelligence and Comprehension

. of the Antecedent/Anaphora Relationship

Computations of correlations were conducted to determine the relationship between intelligence, as measured by the Lorge-Thorndike Intelligence Test. Level 2, Form A, and performance on the TAR-C and

(

TAR-MC. It was noted earlier (see Chapter 5, Table 5.3) that the mean I.Q. of the High Reader group was nearly six and ene-half points higher than the Low Reader group. The difference between the boys and girls was .10 points.

The correlations between the total scores on the TAR-C and TAR-MC and the total sample (N=100) are given in Table 7.6.

#### TABLE 7.6

#### CORRELATIONS BETWEEN INTELLIGENCE AND SCORES

#### ON THE TAR-C AND TAR-MC (N=100)

Correlation of Student Scores on:	with	I.Q. Scores on th Intelligence Tes	he <u>Lorge-Thorndike</u> t, Level 2, Form A
Test			correlation
TAR-C, Form 1			•443*
TAR-C, Form 2			•475*
TAR-MC, Form 1			₀ •374×
TAR-MC, Form 2			•396*
TAR-C, Form 1 $(0-2$ Pr	opositions)	•	•391*
TAR-C, Form 1 (3-5 Pr	opositions)		.412*
TAR-C, Form 2 (O-2 Pr	opositions)	2 <sup>7</sup>	.426*
TAR-C, Form 2 (3-5 Pr	opositions)	3	•450*
TAR-MC, Form 1 (0-2 F	ropositions)		. 310×
TAR-MC, Form $1.(3-5 \text{ P})$	ropositions)		-415*
TAR-MC, Form $2(0-2)$ P	ropositions)		•358*
TAR-MC, Form $2(3-5)$ F	ropositions)		•389*
TAR-C, Form 1 (Catego	ry l)		•339*
TAR-C, Form 1 (Catego	ry 2)		•443*
TAR-C, Form 1 (Catego	ry 7)		•396*
TAR-C, Form 2 (Catego	ry_l)		•475*
TAR-C, Form 2 (Catego	ry 2)		•456*
TAR-C, Form 2 (Catego	ry 7)		• .319*
TAR-MC, Form 1 (Categ	ory 1)		•355*
TAR-MC, Form 1 (Catego	ory 2)		•337*
TAR-MC, Form 1 (Categ	ory 7)		•247**
TAR-MC, Form 2 (Catego	ory 1)		•360×
TAR-MC, Form 2 (Categ	ory 2)	•	•272 <del>*</del> ≭
TAR-MC, Form 2 (Catego	ory 7)		.251**

\* indicates significance at the .001 level \*\* indicates significance at the .01\_evel All correlations were significant at the .Ol level of confidence. The range of correlations for the TAR-C and TAR-MC was from .251 to .475. In general, the correlations were higher for the TAR-MC than the TAR-C.

> The Relationship between Visual Memory Span and Performance on the TAR-C and TAR-MC

The scores obtained from the <u>Detroit Tests of Learning Aplitude</u>. <u>Subtest 16</u>, were correlated with scores on the TAR-C and TAR-MC to determine the relationship between visual memory span for letters and comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora dualism. The correlations for the total sample are shown in Table 7.7.

The correlations that were significant ranged from .243 to .411. Three of the correlations were not significant at the .01 level of confidence. Typically, the correlations for visual memory span and the TAR-C and TAR-MD were not as high as those found between intelligence and the TAR.

#### Sumary

The relationship between the two variables (intelligence and visual memory span) and the subjects' performance on the TAR-C and TAR-MC was examined by means of computations of correlations. All of the correlations between intelligence and scores on the TAR-C and TAR-MC were significant at the .Ol level or better. They ranged from .251 to .475. Only three of the correlations between visual memory span and scores on the TAR-C and TAR-MC were not significant at the .Ol level or better.

### TABLE 7.7

# CORRELATIONS RETWEEN VISUAL MEMORY SPAN SCORES

## ON THE TAR-C AND TAR-MC (NOIDO)

Correlation of Student Scores on:	with	Vioual	Memory Sc	ores for letters
Test	·			correlation
TAR-C, Form 1		and the set of the set	<ul> <li>Westmanningerstein statistiktikteiningerste</li></ul>	COTTOINCION
TAR-C, Form				1384.6
TAR-MC, Form 1				. 34,5%
TAR-MC, Form 2				• 334 <sup>#</sup>
TAR-C, Form 1 $(0-2)$	Propositional			·298**
TAR-C, Form 1 (3-5	Propositions)			.411 <sup>#</sup>
-1 Au = 0, Form 2 (0-2)	Propositional			•295≭#
-1 Au - 0, Form 2 (3-5)	Propositional			•239
1 An-ric, form 1 (0-2)	Propositional			•399*
$1$ $n_{n}$ $r_{n}$ $r_{n}$ $r_{n}$	Proposttional			•322×
$1Aa-m$ , form 2 (0_2)	Propositional			•312*
$1 n n - n 0$ , $ror_{11} 2 (3 - 5)$	Propositional			• 345*
IAA-U, Form 1 (Cater	([ vno:			.218
TAR-C, Form 1 (Cater	ic vro			• JU.L^
TAR-C, Form 1 (Cater	orv 7)			•231##
TAR-C, Form 2 (Categ	(f vro			•339*
TAR-C, Form 2 (Categ	ory 2)	·.,		•298*** 21.2**
TAR-C, Form 2 (Categ	ory 7)			•243₩¥ •340¥
TAR-MC, Form 1 (Cate	gory 1)			.312*
TAR-MC, Form 1 (Cate	gory 2)			•254**
TAR-MC, Form 1 (Cate,	gory 7)			•264**
TAR-MC, Form 2 (Cate)	gory 1)			•294**
TAR-MC, Form 2 (Cate)	gory 2)			.292***
TAR-MC, Form 2 (Cates	gory 7)			.113
* indicates signific	cance at the .00	llevel		

\*\* indicates significance at the .001 level \*\* indicates significance at the .01 level

.

#### CHAPTER B

SUMMARY, CONCLUSIONS, AND IMPLICATIONS

Fow models of reading today ignore the reader's active use of syntactic and semantic cues in the reading act. Therefore, it is important to determine how various readers comprehend grammatical phenomena found in written materials. It is especially important to determine the abilities of these readers in the acquisition stage of reading.

While it may be the task of the reading specialist to determine how children comprehend grammatical phonomena, its is the teacher of reading who must apply this knowledge in an effective manner. It is the teacher, knowledgeable of the characteristics and capabilities of the learner, along with an understanding of the grammatical phenomena the child will encounter, who will be the facilitator of the child's acquisition of the reading process. Children in the primary grades are still acquiring the ability to comprehend certain granmatical structures in oral language. With the current emphasis on the relationship between oral language and reading, it is important to know the exact extent of this relationship. Too many current authors have glibly talked of this relationship in terms that are sweeping in gope. Specifically, some seem to imply that any structure unders ood in oral language will be reciprocably understood in written language, provided adequate word identification is available. However, as Fagadi (1969) has asserted, there is no guarantee that a child who is flyent with oral language will be equally fluant with written language since the structure of the two is different (p. 245). Further support for this statement is found in the results of studies by Cosens (1973) and Holt (1974).

159

It was the purpose of this study to examine one element of the total grammitical structure of the language, namely, and  $\beta$  reference. The focus of the investigation was on the relative abit. High and how Readers in their second year of school, as defined by preformince on a measure of general reading comprehension, to understand the antecedent/ anaphora relationship. The variables examined in regard to this relationship were as follows:

- a. The effects a sumber of interedents in a discourse of the comprehension of the anteredent/anophora relationship.
- b. The effects of distance between antecedent and anaphora on the comprehension of this dualism.
- c. The effects of certain anaphoric categories (representing case) on the comprehension of the antecodent/anaphora relationship.

A secondary purpose of the study was to investigate the relationship between oral language production of anaphora and the orderstanding of the antecedent/anaphora dustion in written langu

This chapter will present a brief summary of the investigation and its findings. In addition, the conclusions, educational implications, and cortain limitations of the study will be put forward.

#### Summary of the tudy

This study was concerned with end of a farticular grapmatical phenomenon on the ability of children who were in the acquisition stage of the reading process, and who were assumed to be in the acquisition stage of oral language development. Thus, three distinct, yet obviously interrelated reviews of the literature were carried out.

The initial review of the literature focused on establishing a theoretical position in terms of the reading process. Essential aspects of the reading act were identified and examined. While not negating the importances of the other components (discrimination and word identification) this investigation was basically concerned with comprehension, and particularly with the semantic and syntactic cues used by the reader to acquire meaning. It was established that while the grammitical phenomenon in questical (emphore) does contain certain semantic information, it is basically a syntactic aspect of the summation. The importance of the syntactic element in language, in general, was established by reviewing several pertinent studies, including two that dealt directly with anaphora and its effect on comprehension of written language.

The second review of literature involved the description (including a definition) of the grammetical phenomenon being finvestigated, namely, anaphoric reference. A historical review was carried out to establish which elements of the language are considered anaphoric in nature. Also, certain approaches to the description of language were examined for applicability to the study.

Finally, studies dealing directly with anaphora, in written and oral language, were analyzed for relevance to this investigation. Several decisions as to the scope and direction of the study resulted from this review. These included the choice of anaphoric categories that were investigated, the inclusion of the distance factor, and the selection of the oral language task.

The testing instruments used in the study were the specially designed Tests of Anaphoric Reference (TAR). Two basic testing formats were used in the TAR. The antecedent/anaphora relationship is a dualism in the sense that both elements need to be identified. Therefore, the

3

161

first TAR incorporated a selected close procedure where the subject was provided with the antecedent and was required to supply the proper anaphora while the second format of the TAR required the subject to identify the antecedent when provided with the anaphora.

Two forms of each format of the TAH were devised. Form 1 of each format contained two interacting anteredents, one male and one famile. None interacting interacting male unitwo female were present in Form 3 of each TAR. The forms were also designed so that the variables of distance and mapheric category could be analyzed.

Upon evaluation of the results of the bilot Study, contain modifications were made on the TAN and the directions used with the tests. The TAR were administered to 100 students of the Education Catholic School System. In addition, various other instruments were administered to the children. These included an intelligence test, is test for visual memory span, and a specially designed word recognition test. A selected subsample of forty-eight children, drawn from the main sample, was given an oral language production task and protocols from this task were obtained.

The basic design of the study was a 242 factorial with three dependent variables--number of antecedents, distance between anteredent and anaphora, and anaphoric category. Statistical procedures used to evaluate the data included two-way analyses of w riance, two-way analyses of covariance, one analyses of variance, t-tests, and Seareon product moment correlations. The findings of these analyses are contained the next section.
## Main Findings and General Conclusions

In this section the most significant findings from Cr. ters 6 and 7 are summarized. The implications of these findings are also discussed.

### Main Findings

The main flatings, as presented in Chapter 6 and 7 will be discussed under the following headings: High-Low Readers; boy-girl readers; the effects of number of antecedents in a discourse; the effects of distance; the effects of anaphoric category; and, the relationship between oral language production of anaphora and comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship.

<u>High-Low Readers</u>. In his thesis dealing with cognitive synthesis and reading comprehension, Latham (1973) reasoned that "...while a knowledge of verbal concepts is necessary for the comprehension of written language, it is not a sufficiant indition to ensure that such comprehen: Il occur (p. 368)." And ond factor which, though important imprehension, cannot ensure that it will be achieved was shown by the results of this study. This second factor is word recognition.

The students who were included in the final sample had to demonstrate adequate word recognition ability, yet, there was a variance in the ability of the students to comprehend the antecedent/anaphora rolationship in written language. This study showed a consistent pattern of significantly higher scores on the TAR by the High Reader groupwhen compared with the Low Reader group. This superiority was especially evident when the number of antecedents was considered or when the distance between antecedent and anaphora was taken into account. Only in analyzing the data concerning the effects of anaphoric category was the evidence less than overwhelming. However, even in these comparisons, the totality of the evidence can only lead one to conclude that High Readers outperform Low Readers. In other to appreciate these results one must realize that the High and Low Reader groups were dichotomized by a band of scores. The scores were ranked and an arbitrary cut-off point of 3.6 was chosen so that equal numbers fell above and below the score.

In examining the relative performance of High and Low Readers in more detail, the first analysis focused on the number of antecedents interacting throughout a discourse. With all results significant at the .001 or better, the High Readers outscored the Low Readers on both forms of the TAR-C and TAR-MC. Thus, neither format nor number of antecedents affected the superior performance of the High Readers over the Low Readers.

Highly significant results, favoring the High Reader group over the Low Readers, was evidenced in examining the effects of distance between antecedent and anaphora on the TAR. The higher scores of the High Reader group were maintained whether the distance was 0-2 or 3-5 propositions intervening. In addition, this superiority was evident on both forms of the TAR which indicates that neither format nor number of characters influenced the findings.

The performance of the two reading groups on the anaphoric categories built into the passages, and reflected on the TAR, basically followed the pattern established in the other analyses. While the High Readers typically scored higher than the Low Readers, there were two instances of no significant difference between the two groups. This break in established patterns was noted on the TAR-C, Form 2 and the TAR-MC, Form 1. In both cases the level of significance approached the .O5 criterion for rejection of the hypothesis. There was no pattern to these exceptions as they occurred on a different test format and the two different categories.

It is interesting to note that, generally, test format did not influence the performance of the reader groups. This fact lends support to the early contention that the anteredent/anaphora relationship is indeed a dualism and that comprehension is contingent upon awareness of both elements, that is, the antecedent and anaphora.

In summary, it has been shown that High Readers achieved significantly higher scores on the TAR regardless of the variable being considered. This superiority was evidenced in spite of the fact that all children in the sample had to demonstrate adequate word recognition of the words contained in the test passages. To further rule out the effects of word recognition, the statistical procedure of analysis of covariance, with the covariate being word recognition, was used to analyze the data. This would appear to present strong evidence that word recognition ability cannot be used to explain the difference in scores by the sample.

Why then, do High Readers continually demonstrate such a distinct superiority in scores on the TAR? Latham (1973) contends that "...the ability to select the appropriate information processing strategy appears to be a necessary condition for the comprehension of linguage (p. 369)." Intuitively, this is a satisfying statement and it could be

that High Headers have adopted superior information processing strategies, however, it is not known why these readers have adopted better strategies or more important, how they acquired superior strategies.

If the antecedent/anaphora relationship is examined it is possible to speculate on two approaches the reader might use to identify the antecedent if he is given the anaphora. First, it could be identified by an association process through the use of memory recall. Given the capacity of short term memory the reader might recall the antecedent from this store if the distance factor is sufficiently short (cf. Lesgold, 1972). However if the distance between antecedent and anaphora is increased it is possible that the information has been passed on and processed in long term memory. If the reader can recall the proper antecedent from the appropriate memory store comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship will take place.

A second strategy could occur when the reader realizes he cannot recall the information (the proper antecedent) and reverts to a visual regression process. It is probable that the reader uses a visual search scan of the print rather than a complete rereading of the text. Borrowing Hochberg's (1970b) idea of "cognitive search guidance", one might speculate that High Readers are better able to use this system--in reverse.

While the above speculations focus on the correct identification of the antecedent it is, of course, possible to identify an improper antecedent. As an explanation to improper identification of the antecedent Lesgold (1973) possibly would contend that the child did not know the interpretation rules required to understand the antecedent/anaphora relationship in the semantic context that it was present. Of course,

to prove this contention, one would need to devise a set of rules that adequately describe the language the child was reading. As yet, this task has defied all attempts.

Another way of applying Lesgold's explanation would be that the child actually knew the rules but failed to apply them properly. This interpretation would coincide with Chomsky's distinction between competence and performance and would claim a psychological reality for such rules--a concept being questioned by a number of current psycholinguists.

Boy-Girl Readers. As Carroll (1971) has observed, "...it is rather universal finding that on the average girls do better than boys on reading tests (p. 182)." While Carroll noted that his observations applied mainly to studies completed in the United States there is no reason to believe this observation is invalid for the children of Canada (see also, Weintraub, 1966). Yet, in this study there were no significant differences revealed on any of the analyses that were carried out. This finding was consistent whether one considered the number of antecedents, the distance between entecedent and anaphora, or the anaphoric category. In addition, the ngs remained constant on both the cloze and multiple choice formats of the TAR.

The absence of any significant differences between the mean sco produced by boys and girls might be explained by the mean silent reading comprehension scores obtained by the two groups. There was only a difference of .1 between the mean scores of the two groups. This, of course, is assuming that reading achievement rather than sex is the determining factor.

The equality of the mean comprehension scores could not explain

the significant interaction obtained between sex and reader group on several of the analyses. Four instances of significant interaction were noted and in each case the nature of the interaction was similar. The High Readers who were girls outscored the High Readers who were boys but the reverse situation was observed in the case of the Low Readers, that is, boys scored higher than girls.

The interaction can be explained in terms of I.Q. Referring to Table 5.3 one can see that the mean I.Q. of High Girl Readers was 116.12 while the mean I.Q. of High Boy Readers was 113.88. The difference for the Low Readers was reversed with the boys mean I.Q. being 109.76 and the girls 107.56.

All instances of interaction were recorded on the TAR-C. Three cases were found on Form 1 of the TAR-C and the other was observed on Form 2 of the TAR-C.

<u>Number of Antecedents</u>. The effects of number of antecedents interacting throughout a discourse on the subjects' ability to comprehend the antecedent/anaphora relationship was examined by means of .t-tests. For all reader groups, the mean scores obtained on Forms 1 and 2, on both the TAR-C and TAR-MC, were compared. A total of sixteen comparisons were carried out.

The findings indicated that an increase in the oper of antecedents, in this case from two to four, resulted in a decrease in the mean scores of all groups on the TAR-C comparisons. All findings were significant. In addition, all but one group (boys) demonstrated a similar pattern of achievement on the TAR-MC. Thus, there are strong indications that an increase in the number of antecedents interacting throughout discourse precipitates a decrease in comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship.

Returning to the explanation of "why" certain groups or individuals do not comprehend the antecedent/anaphora relationship as well as others, it is possible to integrate the above conclusion with the previous discussion. The addition of antecedents to discourse would add to the memory burden of the reader. This burden would be twofold in that one would need to contend with both storage and retrieval of the proper antecedent. If the reader did not use the memory stores to recall the proper antecedent then a visual regression search would have to ensue. The addition of antecedents would increase the complexity of the visual search.

It is an interesting finding that all groups found the addition of antocedents an interfering factor. From the previous findings, it would have been logical to speculate that the Low Reader group only might be affected by the analyses indicated that all reader group scores were significantly lowered by the additional two antecedents.

Distance between Antececant and Anaphora. The literature indicated that an increase in distance between antecedent and anaphora would correspondingly effect a decrease in the reader's ability to understand this grammatical relationship. The results of this study did not fully support this contention. As with the comparisons concerning the number of characters, t-tests were carried out to test the difference between the means. Sixteen separate comparisons were made in this manner.

Out of the sixteen possible comparisons the increased distance, as measured by number of intervening proposition, proved to be a significant factor in seven instances. One additional comparison approached, but did not reach significance.

While only alightly less than half were significant, a pattern was revealed as predominant in reference to the Low Reader group. In three cases, out of a possible total of four, the mean scores of the Low Reader group were significantly lowered by the additional distance between antecedent and anaphora. High Readers and girls were least affected by the increased distance with only one instance of significantly lowered scores. A possible explanation for this finding is that the superior visual memories of the High Readers and girls facilitates the recall of the proper antecedent. The mean visual memory score of the High Readers was over two points higher than the Low Readers (see Table 5.4). While the difference between the girls and boys was not as great (almost one point) it does offer a possible explanation. Since the results for the boy readers were equivocal it is difficult to effer a logical explanation as to the effects of increased distance between antecedent and anaphora.

Harris (1948) and Mosberg and Shima (1969) speculated that distance between antecedent and anaphora affects understanding of this relationship. While these authors/did not support their speculations with any evidence it is, nonetheless, an intuitively satisfying contention. Why then, did the results of this study not fully support this idea? It is possible that the distances used in the investigation were not sufficiently large to be discriminating. In other words, if the investigator had used a distance of O-2 and 8-10 propositions a significant decrease in comprehension might have occurred. Obviously, this is a non-realistic proposal. Since the typical distance found in the passages selected for the study was O-5 propositions, then the use of a greater distance was not justified.

It is possible that certain relationships exist in discourse that defy analysis by means of propositions. For example, consider the following sentences:

a. John turned to Mary and said, "You.

b. John turned to Mary and said, "I ...

c. John smiled at Mary and said, "You...

d. John smiled at Mary and said, "I ...

a. John said to Mary, "I...

Of course, this list of sentences could be expanded but the basic point is that the reader must perceive the correct relationship between the addresser and addressee (cf. Weir, 1962). It is interesting to note that the propositional distance between antecedent and anaphora would be in the 0-2 category. Perhaps, as Lesgold (1974) has argued, imagery factors play a role in comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship. It might be that the reader who could mentally picture the situation would be better equipped to understand the antecedent/anaphora relationship.

It would appear that, from the results of this study, a more detailed investigation of the distance factor, especially by anaphoric category, is warranted.

in this study approximately correspond to case relationships sypically referred to as hominative (Category 1), objective (Category 2), and genitive (Category 7). The review of literature indicated that both the objective and genitive case categories should prove more difficult than the nominative. Comparisons of the three anaphoric categories were made for all reader groups on both the TAR C and TAR MC. This resulted in a total of forty-eight comparisons.

Overall, there were twenty separate instances where one anaphoric category was found to be more difficult for a particular reader group than mother category. Several pattactus of conformance emerged from these analyses. The clearest of the findings focused on the relative case of the mominative case category (Category 1). At no time did any of the groups score lower on this category than either Category 2 or 7. These findings support the earlier work of Fagan (1969) and Coleman (1971). If indeed, the relationship between oral and written language is interwoven as close as some would have us believe, there is also support for the findings of Hatch (1969).

An examination of the findings in relation to the number of antecedents, as found in the TAR-C and TAR-MC, indicated that significant differences in the mean scores of the anaphoric categories were most likely to occur on the TAR that contained four antecedents. Since it has been shown that the subjects' scores were lowered by the addition of antecedents in discourse it is possible that the anaphoric category scores were affected by this factor.

As previously mentioned, the nominative case category (Category 1) did not prove as difficult for the subjects as either the objective case (Category 2) or the genitive (Category 7). Of the three categories, the genitive proved to be the most difficult for the subjects. In the instances where significant differences were reported, Category 7 proved to be more difficult than Category 1 a total of nine times. In comparing Category 7 with Category 2, the genitive was more difficult in four instances. Oral Language Production of Apaphova and Comprehension of the Antegedent/Anaphova Relationship in Written Language. To argue that there is a relationship between oral language and written language is tautological. That the relationship exists is not the crucial question that must be thereast of in the space cause a language of the contines study.

The present study attempted to determine the relationship between oral language production of the anaphoric categories, which contained personal pronouns, and comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship in written language.

Oral language production and performance on the TAR was examined by two methods. First, the oral language output of the anaphoric categories under study was analyzed to determine if the reader groups differed significantly. Next, the sample was dichotomized into High and Low Froducers of the anaphoric categories and the performance of these groups on the TAR was analyzed.

Three separate analyses, using a particular tabulation of oral language production and the scores of the subjects on the TAR, were carried out. The first analysis used the raw tabulations of the subjects' oral language production of the anaphoric categories. It was recognized that these scores could have been influenced by such factors as mean sentence length, that is, one group might consistently produce longer sentences than another group. Needless to say, a group that produced longer sentences might also produce more of the proncuns in the anaphoric categories.

The two-way analysis of variance carried out on the data did not reveal any significant differences in total production for any of the reader groups (High and Low Readers) or sex groups (boys and girls).

The second analysis compared the scores of the conder and sex groups on the TAR and oral language production of the three anaphoric categories devised for the study. Again, no significant differences were reported for any of the comparisons.

Recognizing the limitations imposed by using the raw totals of anaphese production on the oral language task, a more equitable method of calculating production of the categories was devised. While method took into consideration the possible effects of sentence length. For this an yeis the total production of the anaphoric categories us a divided by the total number of words produced (fifty senter sere analyzed for each subject). This produced a percentage of total anaphoric category production to total number of words. In this analysis the findings were significant. High Readers produced a significantly smaller seventage of anaphora than Low Readers. Main effects for the sex groups were not noted.

The results of the third analysis tend to support the previous suspicion that mean sentence length might influence the production totals of the anaphoric category under study. Examining the mean total for the reader groups one finds that the High Readers produced more pronouns that fit into one of the three anaphoric categories than low Readers, although this difference was not significant. However, when the production of the anaphoric categories was tabulated in the form of a percentage (anaphora to total number of words), the High Reader group produced a smaller percenta pronouns that fit the three anaphoric categories than the low group.

To further explore the question of oral language production

and comprehension in written language, the subsample (1) subjects drawn from the sum sample of 100) was dichotomized into High and Low Angless Freducers (associated from the concerning the dichotomization). The mean sector of the two erst language production groups acressions with a subvecby means of the two erst language production groups acressions of the High Anaphers Freducers sector lower on the TAR-J and TAR-SE none of the comparisons actually reached the lower of confidence. Several of the comparisons approached, but a not reach significance.

The cost important finding from the investigation of oral language production and written language comprehension was that those subjects who best understood the antecedent/anaphora relationship in written language produced a smaller percentage of anaphora (the three anaphoric calmestic under study) in oral language. It would appear that the work of baseding (1969) offers at least a partial explanation for this finding. He associated high production of anaphora (his categories were not the same however as those used in this study) with children who use a restricted language code (in a Berstein sense). While this investigator is not prepared to posit that the children in this study who were Low Anaphora Producers possess a restricted language code it is possible that anaphora production is linked to language maturity. For example, it is quite difficult, if not impossible, to modify personal pronouns in any effective manner. Thus, one can say The sad wandering minstral, but it is intuitively wrong to say The and, and daring he. Therefore, it seems to this writer that the children who exhibit maturity in their language will use pronouns, and perhaps anaphora in general, in a judicious manner.

# The Contributions of this dealy

The fluidge of this investigation sugrest several to, testions conding facory, instructional programs in conding, and tesesor clu-

New Marg Theory

Although this study sub-based on one without avery of the distributed the source of sectors developed as the extension of the mean of the sector of the meaning act. The mean of the reading act. The mean of the reading act, the mean of the sector of the reading act. The mean of the reading act is the reading proposed by the summer (1976) are determined in Graph the is reproduced here (Figure 3.1).

## FIGURE 8.1

# AN ADAPTION OF GOODMAN'S 1970 ECHEL ( TO HERVITRATE EARLY SILENT REALING



This wodel may still be used to decorabe the reading process of beginning readers. This study, nopefully has udded more information scout - what happens during recoding.

This investigation focused on the abilities of beginning readers and their understanding of one, primarily syntactic, relationship in language. The study clearly demonstrated that in spite of . adequate word recognition ability, Low Readers do not comprehend the antecodent/anaphora relationship as accurately as High Readers.

It was also demonstrated that the beginning reader's ability to comprehend the antecedent/anaphora relationship is diminished by the presence of certain linguistic factors, especially factors that directly impinge upon the understanding of the antecedent/anaphora relationship (e.g., the number of antecedents in a discourse, the distance between antecedent and anaphora, etc.).

As Latham (1973) has pointed out, "...the ability to effect both semantic and syntactic processing is dependent upon a knowledge of language (p. 391)." The findings of this study indicate that mere production of a given element in oral language does not guarantee comprehension of that element in written language. Thus, while Latham's statement warrants consideration, careful thought will have to be given to the methods of evaluating the child's knowledge of language and how this knowledge of language relates to written language comprehension. Reception of written language (reading) appears to be one of possibly several peculiar language processes. The fact that a certain phenomenon is present in oral language does not necessarily mean it is equally available in written language. This conclusion is derived from the finding that High Readers outscore Low Readers on the TAR but when oral language production is considered High Anaphora Producers do not correspondingly outperform Low Anaphora Rroducers on the written language ineasures (TAR).

Paycholinguistics

Although the term "psycholinguistic" is actually redundant since it is difficult to imagine a normal language situation where the

mind would not be involved, many reading experiments now adopt this label. Using a partial replication of J. Mackworth's schematic model of the reading process the role of memory (and its interaction with language) will be explored. Figure 8.2 depicts the model.

FIGURE 8.2

PARTIAL REPLICATION OF THE J. MACKWORTH SCHEMATIC MODEL



OF-THE READING PROCESS

In this study it was assumed that the children possessed adequate discrimination ability, and since word recognition was accounted for, the recognition stage of the J. Mackworth model will not be discussed. The reading task (TAR) required the subjects to use both shortterm memory (STM) and long-term memory (LTM). Three distinct aspects of memory must be accounted for in both STM and LTM. They are: coding, storage and reorganization, and retrieval. While not diminishing the importance of the first two aspects it would appear that retrieval is quite important in comprehending the antecedent/anaphora relationship. The study indicated that High Readers comprehend this relationship better than Low Readers. Also, the variables that tend to increase the compreheneibility of the antecedent/anaphora relationship affected the High Readers less than the Low Readers. Two of the variables, number of antecedents and distance, relate directly to the three aspects of memory as forwarded by J. Mackworth. While the three aspects of STM and LTM are present in the antecedent/anaphora relationship the study did not indicate any direct indication as to the importance of each.

## Implications for Instructional Programs

If indeed, there was a perfect correlation between oral language production of a given grammatical element and the comprehension of that element in written language, there would be little need to "teach comprehension". Teachers of reading would basically have to ensure the child was equipped with adequate word identification skills. Since this correlation has not been demonstrated one must decide the relative emphasis to place on various aspects of written language comprehension.

The investigator does not view the grammatical phenomenon that was studied as occupying a major role in the general schema of teaching comprehension. The antecedent/anaphora relationship is but one of many such inter- and intra-sentence, phenomena that needs to be understood by the reader. However, some direct teaching of the relationship is obviously warranted. At the primary level of schooling, the relationship can be introduced in sentences where the antecedent and anaphora are present in one utterance. As children progress in their general comprehension ability more complexity may be added to the antecedent/ anaphora relationship. For example, the addition of antecedents to a discourse has been shown to affect comprehension of antecedent and anaphora. Stories that contain several characters would be a logical step in increasing the complexity of the antecedent/anaphora relationship. Both direct teaching and follow-up practice would be called for in these situations.

<sup>A</sup>The selected cloze procedure used in this study to test the subjects' ability to comprehend the antecedent/anaphora relationship could be readily applied as a tool for developing the child's awareness of this grammatical phenomenon. The use of this technique would eliminate the need for specially designed exercises since it is adaptable to any written material.

The more familiar multiple choice format could be applied to practice exercises focusing on the antecedent/anaphora relationship. A viable alternative to the traditional multiple choice format would be the "wh" type questions proposed by Bormuth (1970). It must be remembered that both methods are considered either testing or practice procedures. Direct teaching, prior to these procedures, is a prerequisite. It is the contention of this writer that the classroom teacher must do more than merely provide the opportunity (or provide experiences) for the manipulation of this grammatical phenomenon. Formats such as those presented by Wallen (1972) or Otto et al., (1974) can be adapted for the teaching of the antecedent/anaphora relationship. Regardless of which teaching format is used it is important that the child be aware of the focus of instruction and not merely provided with a general language manipulation experience.

While it was not the purpose of this study to examine children's writing, at least one instructional implication seems to apply. As Hawkins (1969) has pointed out, pronouns are difficult to modify in any effective manner. Thus, it would appear that an over-reliance on pronouns is an undesirable trait in writing.

The suggestion concerning children's writing would also seem to have some application to the use of oral language. So-called language maturity measures are still in an embryonic state of development. While it is obvious that the individual language situation would dictate whether or not the use of a substitute form was more appropriate than the use of the referent, it might be generally suggested that an overreliance on substitutes would lead to a lack of precision in oral language.

It is perhaps too ambitious to suggest that publishers of children's written materials, especially basal readers, consider the use of anaphora. Although the writer is not advocating "anaphora" control", in the manner that vocabulary control has been adopted, certain aspects of the antecedent/anaphora relationship should be taken into account. For example, the introduction and continued interaction of a large number (e.g., four or more) of characters is not justifiable in the written materials of beginning readers. This is not to say several characters cannot enter a story; it is only advocated that complex interaction of these characters, as indicated by pronominal reference, not take place.

The findings of this study did not conclusively demonstrate that distance between antecedent and anaphora is an interfering factor. in comprehension excepts for the Low Reader group. However, until more is known about this factor common sense would mitigate against placing great distance between these two elements. In the analysis of basal readers for this study one instance was recorded where the distance between antecedent and anaphora was 123 words. Distance of this magnitude would appear to be unwarranted, especially for readers who are low in general comprehension ability.

The scores of the Low Readers in this study were those typically most affected by the various factors that can influence comprehension of the antecedent/anaphora relationship. Existing research on the differences between achieving and non-achieving readers tends to be correlational in nature. Few studies have focused on the specific aspects of reading that differentiate the achieving and non-achieving reader. In this study it was found that the scores of the Low Readers were significantly lower than those of the High Readers in practically all of the comparison focusing on the comprehension of the antecedent/° anaphora relationship. Since many schools in North America group on some basis of reading comprehension achievement these characteristics of Low Readers appear important if one is to adequately plan an instructional program in reading.

Implications for Teacher Education

In her succinct, yet encompassing statement regarding a definition of reading Mackworth (1971) has stated that "..."reading" can only be defined in terms of "who" is reading what in what state for what reason (p. 8-67)." Teachers of reading need to know about these four facets of reading (this writer considers "who" a facet) in order to facilitate the acquisition of the reading process. The writer views this study as adding a dimension of knowledge to the who and what components of Mackworth's definition.

Teachers will need to be aware of the linguistic development of the child and how this development relates to acquisition of the reading process. To acquire this type of knowledge a substantial linguistic component will need to be incorporated into the teacher training program. This requirement will need to be specially tailored to meet the requirements of teachers. Thus, the writer is not arguing for a block of theoretical linguistic courses. A specially designed course (or courses) dealing with language acquisition and the description of language (in general) is required. Needless to say, the components of this course would be interrelated with the teaching of reading.

Comprehension is too often thought of in terms of content. Teachers need to be aware of the syntactic structures by which information is signalled in language. This study demonstrated the lack of ability, by some students, to comprehend one syntactic aspect of language. Other studies have amply shown that there are many syntactic phenomena that are not fully comprehended by students in the primary and elementary school.

While a great deal of lip service is given to "meeting individual needs" in children, little attention has been paid to the characteristics of certain groups of readers. There is obviously variability

in the individual performance of students who were claudified as either High or low Readers, yet, the knowledge of general performance patterns by these groups of readers can provide the teacher with many insights.

The relationship between oral and written language is the focus of a great deal of resent research. Inclusive approaches to the teaching of reading are based on the assumption that there is a high correlation between oral and written language ability (e.g., the so-called Language-Experience Approach). It was argued in this study that the oral-written language relationship may not be as straightforward as it may appear. However, complex as the relationship may be, teachers of children who are in the acquisition stage of both oral and written language need to know the characteristics and capabilities of these learners.

Suggestions for Further Research

This study investigated one facet of the total grammatical phenomenon of substitution. Although a rationale was forwarded for the study of only this particular aspect of substitution, there is an obvious need for further investigation into this grammatical phenomenon of language. Many interesting elements of substitution, especially anaphora, are suggested by the work of Bormuth et al. (1970) and Lesgold (1974). Indeed, the sometimes conflicting findings of these two investigations have opened up many new avenues of research.

The effects of distance between antecedent and anaphora require further investigation. The findings of this study were mixed as to whether or not this was a significant element in comprehension. Possible avenues of research lie in devising new methods of measuring the distance

botwoon autocontent and apphora.

Certain implicit categories contain limited semilt's information. Such pronouns as he and she reveal both the gender and number of the intergient while such words as you render no such information. The relative difficulty of such anyhors offers an intriguing dealfor study. For show difficulty of such anyhors offers an intriguing dealfor study. For show differents in imagery factors this area seems to offer fruit? The objections.

Although an analysis of basel readers was carried out to establish the incidence of anophora in the grade two texts, further, and more detailed analyses need to be conducted. As more is learned about the ability to comprehend such inter- and intra-sentence grammatical phenomena such as anaphora the incidence of these elements in the reacers will take on more importance.

Mackworth (1971) has asserted that three aspects of each type of memory (short term and long term) must be accounted for in reading. The names these aspects as: (a) coding into memory, (b) storage and reorganization in memory, and, (c) retrieval from memory. The further contends that, for children, the most important aspect is coding into memory. However, to understand the antecedent/anaphora relationship, retrieval from memory woul) appear to be equally important. The role of memory in the understanding of substitution forms in general and anaphora is particular appears to offer many possibilities for research.

Many reading specialists today feel that visual regressions are an integral part of the reading act. Just as Goodman and his associates have enlightened us that oral reading miscues, or errors as they frequently are named, are not equal in value, one might infor that visual regressions vary in value. The writer has argued that readers use either a second collaboration of a visual region has accord to identify the proper all element for a given angless. There it is the unlikely that the Figh baseler group relies elementary on the memory retrieval process one might second they are better able to accurately locate the referent by second of visual represented. This is possible that for the referent by second of visual represented, it is possible that for the referent by second of visual represented, it relation to the are posterily and the second of visual represented.

This study could not be bound on a theory of grounds which dealt adequately with the enteredent/anophore relationship. I could be initial commutive, which offers one of the theories of grounds have not dequately accounted for discourse phenomenal. Conserved, which has attempted to isocribe discourse, suffers in that it is not real ; a theory of grammar at all. As linguists device some interacts do: theoretically visible means of describing language, superially discourse phenomena, studied such as the present ine need to be madified in repeated.

Since the grammatical phenomenon under study is intercentential and intrasentential the print stimulus for the Gah was discourse. Many recent psycholanguistic experiments have used the sentence as the seans of presentation. It would appear that presenting centence in isolation is not consistent with the normal act of reading. This study showed that several variables which are apposited with adustitution can influence comprehension (e.s., number of anteredents in the discourse). It would appear that further research in reading must consider the normal presentation mode of the phenomenon under study.

Finally, as Far and Weintraub (1971) have repeatly notes: longi-" sudinal studies are concrisions only by their absence in the literature.

The development of the bin and  $u_{i}$  equals then and  $u_{i}$  the dependence of the bin  $u_{i}$  and  $u_{i}$  the equal of the bin  $u_{i}$  equals the equal of the equa of

#### and the second state of th

The second of functions of the state of the state of the second se

At the solution, a small of was greated as event dynamics of a state of a to determine the total drive extraor of the transmission of a state of a state drive in a state of the transmission of transmission of the transmission of transmission of the transmis

In correcting the Utical man lead to be appeared in the term of the Utical state of the Utical state of the term of te

The restriction of the construction of the activity of the first state f of the construction of the construction of the state f of the construction of the constr

### Additional Addit Additional Additiona Additional Additional Additional Additional Additional Addi

This study is exactly of the arctic contribution of the second se

The mentify on the element of a constraint of the element of th

(a) A set of the set of the set of the set of set of the the third set of the set of

### 1,

- is and the second s The Alexandra Second second
  - المرومين المحالي **م**ار الألفان محالمة ويون الأن المرافق المرومين محاف المحافة . المراجع ومن المحالم محاف المراجع والمحاف المحاف المحاف المحاف المحاف المحاف المحاف المحاف المحاف المحاف المحاف
- ار در استریکی می در دولان سیسی این میکرد. در این میکند این این بیان میکند این این میکرد. این این این این این میکرد این این میکرد میکرد کرد. میکرد در این داری این میکرد میکرد کرد. این این میکرد این میکرد میکرد و این میکرد میکرد و این
- المان المانية المانية المانية المانية (1996) ومعادلة من من المانية المانية المانية (1997). المانية من المانية المانية المانية المانية المانية المانية من المانية المانية (1997). المانية المانية المانية المانية المانية (1997) من المانية المانية (1997). المانية المانية (1997) من المانية (1997)
- The management of the second second
- n werden die der Standen auf die Gesterne Statementen die Gesterne die Gesterne die Gesterne die Gesterne die G Statementen die Gesterne die Geste
- and a second s A second second
- المتحدين المنافق المتحدين المستومين المستومين المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافق ا المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافقة المتحد المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافق المنافق
- en en la seconda de la companya de la seconda de la companya de la seconda de la companya de la companya de la Nomenta de la companya de la companya
- en se en la companya de la companya A companya de la comp
- en en la companya de la construction de la construction de la construction de la construction de la construction
- الم المحمد ال المحمد المحمد
- and a second second second for a second s A second second

Bloom, L. Language development: Form and function in emerging grammars. Cambridge, Massachusetts: MIT Press, 1970.

blorfield, L. Language. New York: Henry Holt, 1933.

0

من

Bobrow, D. G. Natural language input for a computer problem-solving system. In M. Minsky (Ed.), <u>Semantic information processing</u>. Cambridge, Mass.: M.I.T. Press, 1968.

Bormuth, J. R. Cloze as a measure of readability. <u>IRA Conference</u> <u>Proceedings</u>, 1963, <u>8</u>, 131-134.

Bormuth, J. R. Relationships between selected language variables and comprehensibility and difficulty. Cooperative Research Project #2082, U. S. Office of Education, 1964.

Bormuth, J. R. Readability: A new approach. Reading Research Guarterly, 1966, 1, 79-132.

Bormuth, J. R. Cloze readability procedure. CSEIP Occasional Report, No. 1, University of California, Los Angeles, 1967.

Bormuth, J. R. Development of readability analyses. Project No. 7-0052ger Contract No. 0EC-3-7-070052-0326, U. S. Department of Health, Education, and Welfare, 1969.

Bormuth, J. R. <u>On the theory of achievement test items</u>. Chicago: University of Chicago Fress, 1970.

Bormuth, J. R., Manning, J., Carr, J., and Pearson, D. Children's comprehension of between- and within-sentence syntactic structures. Journal of Educational Psychology, 1970, <u>61</u>, 349-357.

Bougere, M. B. Selected factors in aral language related to first-grade reading achievement. <u>Reading Research Quarterly</u>, 1969, <u>5</u>, 31-53.

Bradley, M. Effect's on reading tests of deletions of selected grammatical categories. In G. B. Schick and M. M. May (Eds.), <u>Beading:</u> <u>Propess and pedagory</u>. Milwaukee, Wisconsin: The National Reading Conference, 1970.

. Bresnan, J. A note on the notion 'Identity of sense anaphora'. Lin-

Brown, R. <u>A first language</u>. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1973.

Brown, R., and Fraser, C. The acquisition of syntax. In C. N. Cofer and B. S. Musgrave (Eds.), <u>Verbal behavior and learning</u>. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1963.

Brown, R., Cazden, C., and Bellugi-Klima, The child's grammar from I to IIF. In J. P. Hill (Ed.), <u>Michaesota Symposia on Child</u>

• }

Develorment, Minneapolis, Minnesota: University of Minnesota Press, 1968.

Buill, O. K. (Ed.). <u>Sixth Mental Measurements Yearbook</u>. Highland Park, New Jersey: Gryphon Frees, 1965.

Buros, O. K. (Ed.). <u>Seventh Mental Measurements Yearbook</u>. Highland Park, New Jersey: Grypnon Fress, 1972.

- Burt, M. K. From deep to surface structure: An introduction to transformational grammar. New York: Harper and Row, 1971.
- Carey, P. W., Mehler, J., and Bever, T. G. Judging the veracity of ambiguous sentences. Journal of Verbal Learning and Verbal Behavior, 1970, 9, 243-254.
- Carroll, J. B. Learning from verbal discourse in educational media: <u>A review of the literature</u>. Frinceton, New Jersey: Educational Testing Service, 1971.
- Cazden, C. B. <u>Child Language and education</u>. New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1972.
- Chai, D. T. Communication of pronominal referents in ambiguous English sentences for children and adults. Report Number 13, University of Michigan Center for Human Growth and Development, 1967.
- Chall, J. S. Readability: An Appraisal of research and application. Bureau of Educational Research Monographs, Number 34. Columbus, Ohio: The Ohio State University Press, 1958.
- Chomsky, C. S. The acquisition of syntax in children from 5 to 10. Cambridge, Massachusetts: MIT Press, 1969.
- Chomsky, C. S. Review of M. B. Hanf, A study of children's thinking as expressed through oral language discourse. <u>Research in the</u> <u>Teaching of English</u>, 1973, 7, 27-29.
- Chomsky, N. <u>Syntactic structures</u>. The Hague: Mouton, 1957. Chomsky, N. <u>Aspects of the theory of syntax</u>. Cambridge, Massachusetts; MIT Press, 1955.

Christensen, F. A generative rhetoric of the paragraph. <u>College Compo-</u> <u>sition and Communication</u>, 1965, <u>14</u>, 155-151.

- Clay, M. M. A syntactical analysis of reading errors. <u>Journal of</u> <u>Verbal Jearning and Verbal Behavior</u>, 1968, 7, 434-458.
- Cohen, M. E. Active and passive language development of grammar. <u>Connecticut College Fsychology Journal</u>, 1967, <u>4</u>, 20-24.

Coleman, E. B. Developing a technology of written instruction: Some determiners of the complexity of prose. In E. Z. Rothkopf

......

1S?

and P. E. Johnson (Eds.), <u>Verbal learning research and the</u> <u>technology of writton instruction</u>. New York: Teachers College Press, Columbia University, 1971.

Cosens, G. V. The effect of deletion produced structures on word identification and comprehension of beginning readers. Unpub-"lished doctoral dissertation, University of Alberta, 1973.

Cowan, P. A., Weber, J., Hoddinott, B. A., and Klein, J. Mean length of spoken response as a function of stimulus, experimenter, and subject. <u>Child Development</u>, 1968, <u>40</u>, 191-203.

Crymes, R. Some systems of substitution correlations in modern American English. The Hague: Mouton, 1968.

Dale, E., and Tyler, R. W. A study of factors influencing the difficulty of reading materials for adults of limited reading ability. <u>Library Guarterly</u>, 1934, <u>4</u>, 384-412.

Dale, E., and Chall, J. S. A formula for predicting readability. Educational Research Bulletin, 1948, 27, 11-20.

Dale, E., and Reichert, D. <u>Bibliography of vocabulary studies</u>. Columbus, Onio: Bureau of Educational Research, Onio State University, 1957.

Dale, E., Razik, T., and Petty, W. <u>Bibliography of vocabulary studies</u>. Columbus, Onio: Ohio State University, 1973.

Dale, P. S. Language development. Hinsdale, Illinois: Dryden Press,

Davis, E. A. The development of linguistic skill in twins, singletons with siblings, and only children from age five to ten years. Minneapolig: University of Minnesota Press, 1937.

Davis, F. E. Fundamental factors of comprehension in reading. <u>Psycho-</u> metrika, 1944, 2, 185-197.

Davis, F. B. Research in comprehension in reading. <u>Reading Research</u> <u>Quarterly</u>, 1968, <u>4</u>, 499-545.

Davis, F. E. (Ed.) <u>The literature of research in reading, with emphasis</u> <u>on models</u>. New Brunswick, New Jersey: Graduate School of Education, Rutgers University, 1971.

Dolch, E. The basic sight word test. Champaign, Illinois: Garrard, 1942.

Dougherty, R.' A comparison of two theories of pronominalization and reference. Unpublished M.I.T. paper, 1953, Cambridge, Mass. Cited by L. Harttunen, Pronouns and variables. In R. I. Binnick et al. (Eds.), Papers from the fifth regional meeting

. .

of the Chicago linguistic society. Chicago: Department of Linguistics, University of Chicago, 1969.

- Elson, B., and Pickett, V. An introduction to morphology and syntax. Santa Ana, California: Summer Institute of Linguistics, 1962. Cited by R. Crymes, <u>Some systems of substitution correlations</u> <u>in modern American English</u>. The Hague: Mouton, 1968.
- Epstein, W. Some conditions of the influence of syntactical structure on learning: Grammatical transformation, learning instructions and "chunking". Journal of Verbal Learning and Verbal Behavior, 1967, <u>6</u>, 415-419.
- Fagan, W. T. An investigation into the relationship between reading difficulty and the number and types of sentence transformations. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Alberta, 1969.
- Farr, R., Weintraub, S., Smith, H. R., and Roser, N. The summary: View on a statistically significant trend. <u>Reading Research Quarterly</u>, 1974, <u>IX</u>, 245-246.
- Fillmore, C. J. The case for case. In E. Bach and R. T. Harms (Eds.), <u>Universals in linguistic theory</u>. New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1968.
- Flesch, R. F. <u>Marks of readable style: A study in adult education</u>. New York: Bureau of Publications, Teachers College, Columbia University, 1943.
- Flesch, R. F. A new readability yardstick. <u>Journal of Applied Psychology</u>, 1948, <u>32</u>, 221-233.
- Francis, H. Sentence structure and reading. <u>British Journal of Educa-</u> <u>tional Psychology</u>, 1972, <u>42</u>, 113-119.
- Fries, C. C. <u>The structure of English</u>. New York: Harcourt, Brace, & Co., 1952.
- Gallant, R. Use of cloze tests as a measure of readability in the primary grades. In J. A. Figurel (Ed.), <u>Reading and inquiry</u>. Newark Delaware: International Reading Association, 1965.
- Gates, A. I., and MacGinitie, W. H. <u>Gates-MacGinitie Reading Tests</u>, New York: Teacher's College Fress, 1965.
- Gibbons, H. D. Reading and sentence elements. <u>Elementary English</u> <u>Review</u>, 1941, <u>38</u>, 42-46.
- Gibson, E. J. Learning to read. <u>Science</u>, 1965, <u>148</u>, 1066-1072.
- Gibson, E. J. Reading for some purpose. In J. F. Kavanagh and L. G. Mattingly (Eds.), <u>Manguage by ear and eye</u>. Cambridge, Massachusetts: MIT Press, 1972.

Gibson, E., Gibson, J., Pick, A., and Osser, H. A developmental study of the discrimination of letter-like forms. <u>Journal of Com-</u> <u>parative and Engsiological Psychology</u>, 1962, <u>55</u>, 897-906.

Goodenough, F. L. The use of pronouns by young children: A note on the development of self-awareness. The Journal of Genetic <u>Psychology</u>, 1938, <u>52</u>, 333-346.

- Goodman, K. S. Linguistic study of cues and miscues in reading. <u>Ele-</u> <u>mentary Fnglish</u>, 1965, <u>42</u>, 639-643.
- Goodman, K. S. <u>The psycholinguistic nature of the reading process</u>. Detroit: Wayne State University, 1958.
- Goodman, K. S. Reading: A psycholinguistic guessing game. In H. Singer and R. B. Ruddell (Eds.), <u>Theoretical models and pro-</u> <u>cesses of reading</u>. Newark, Delaware: International Heading Association, 1970.
- Goodman, K. S., and Niles, C. S. <u>Reading process and program</u>. Urbana, Illinois: N.C.T.E., 1970.
- Gough, P. B. Grammatical transformations and speed of understanding. Journal of Verbal Learning and Verbal Behavior, 1965, <u>4</u>, 107-111.
- Gray, W. S., and Leary, B. What makes a book readable? Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1935.

Greene, F. P. A modified cloze procedure for assessing adult reading comprehension. Unpublished doctoral-dissertation, University of Michigan, 1964.

Greenough, D. E., and Semmel, M. I. Comprehension and imitation of sentences by mongoloid children as a function of transformational complexity. Esper presented at the meeting of the American Educational Research Association, Los Angeles, February, 1959.

Hafner, L. E. Cloze Procedure. Journal of Reading, 1966, 9, 415-421.

- Hamilton, H. W., and Deese, J. Comprehensibility and subject-verb relations in complex sentences. Unpublished manuscript, Johns Hopkins University, 1970. Gited by J. E. Garroll, <u>Learning from versal discourse in educational media</u>: <u>A review</u> of the literature. Franceton, New Jersey: Educational Testing Service, 1971.
- Hanf, M. B. Primary grade children's oral language discourse: A description of thematic relations. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of California, Berkeley, 1972.

Harada, S. I. A non-source for reflexives. <u>Linguistic Inquiry</u>, 1971, 2, 546-557.

- Harris, C. W. Measurement of comprehension of literature, part I. <u>School Review</u>, 1948, <u>41</u>, 280-289.
- Harris, C. W. Measurement of comprehension of literature, pair II. School Review, 1948, <u>41</u>, 332-342.

٩.

 $r_0$ 

- Harris, Z. S. Co-occurrence and transformation on linguistic structure. Language, 1957, 33, 283-340.
- Harris, Z. S. <u>Parers in structural and transformational languistics</u>. Dordrecht, Holland: Heidel Fublishing Co., 1970.
- Hartung, C. V. The persistence of tradition in grammar. <u>Quarterly</u> <u>Journal of Speech</u>, 1962, <u>48</u>, 174-186.
- Hasan, R. <u>Grammatical cohesion is spoken and written English</u>, part 1. London: Longmans, 1968.

Hatch, E. Four experimental studies in syntax of young children. Technical Report No. 11, Inglewood, California: Southwest Regional Laboratory for Research and Development, 1970.

- Hawkins, P. R. Social class, the nominal group and reference. Larguage and Speech, 1969, 12, 125-135.
- Hill, A. A. <u>Introduction to linguistic structures</u>. New York: Harcourt, Brace, and Co., 1958.
- Hochberg, J. Attention, organization, and consciousness. In D. I: Mostofsky (Ed.), <u>Attention: Contemporary theory and analysis</u>. New York: Appleton-Century-Croits, 1970. (a)

Hochberg, J. Attention in perception and reading. In F. A. Young and D. B. Lindsley (Eds.), <u>Early experience and visual information</u> <u>processing in perceptual and reading discreters</u>. Washington, D. C.: National Academy of Sciences, 1970. (b)

Hochberg, J. Components of literacy: Speculation and exploratory research. In H. Levin and J. P. Williams (Eds.), <u>Basic studies</u> on reading. New York: Easic Books, 1970. (c)

Hochberg, J., and Brooks, V. Reading as an intentional behavior. In H. Singer and R. B. Ruddell (Eds.). <u>Theoretical models and</u> <u>processes of reading</u>. Newark, Delaware: International Reading Association, 1970.

Hockett, C. F. <u>A course in modern linguistics</u>. New York: MacMillan, 1958.

Holt, P. D. Beginning readers' listening/and oral reading comprehension of deletion in sentences, Unpublished M. Ed. thesis, University of Alberta, 1974. Householder, F. W. Review of Forcheimer, The category of person in language. Language, 1955, 31, 93-100.

Huey, E. B. The psychology and pedagogy of reading. Cambridge, Massachusetts: MIT Press, 1968 (originally published in 1908).

Hunt, K. W. <u>Grammatical structures written at three grade levels</u>. Champaign, Illinois: National Council of Teachers of English, 1965.

Huxley, R. The development of the correct use of subject personal pronouns in two children. In G. B. Flore's d'Arcais and W. J. M.: Levelt (Eds.), <u>Advances in psycholinguistics</u>. Amsterdam: North-Holland, 1970.

Jackendoff, R. S. | An interpretive theory of pronouns and reflexives. Unpublished paper, reproduced by the Linguistics Club, Indiana University, 1958.

Jackendoff, R. S. Semantic interpretation of generative grammar. Cambridge, Massachusetts; MIT Press, 1972.

Jacobs, R. A., and Rosenbaum, P. S. <u>English transformational grammar</u>. Toronto: Blaisdell Publishing, 1968.

Jacobs, R. S., and Rosenbaum, P. S. <u>Transformations</u>, style and meaning. Waltham, Massachusetts: Xerox Fublishing, 1971.

Jenkinson, M. D. Selected processes and difficulties of reading comprehension. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Chicago, 1957.

Jenkinson, M. D. Sources of knowledge for theories of reading. In D. V. Gunderson (Ed.), <u>Language and reading</u>. Washington, D. C.: Center for Applied Linguistics, 1970.

Jespersen, 0./ Essentials of English grammar. London: Allen and Unwin, 1933.

Jespersen, Q. <u>A modern English grammar on historical principles</u>, 7 vols., Copenhagen: Einer Munksgaard, 1914. Reproduced by Allen and Unvin, London, 1954.

Natz, J. 31, and Foder, J. A. The structure of a semantic theory. Language, 1963, 39, 170-210.

Katz, J. J., and Postal, P. M. An intergrated theory of linguistic descriptions. Cambridge, Massachusetts: MIT Press, 1954.

Kelly, T. L. <u>Interpretation of Educational Measurements</u>. Yonkers, N. /Y.: World Book Co., 1927. Cited by R. L. Thornaike in / <u>Reliability</u>. E. F. Lindquist (Ed.), <u>Educational Measurement</u>. Washington, D. C.: American Council on Education, 1951. Konnedy, G. Children's comprehension of natural language. Technical Report No. 30, Southwest Regional Laboratory for Educational Research and Development, 1970.

Kingston, A. J. The psychology of reading. In J. A. Figurel (Ed.), <u>Forging ahead in reading</u>. Newark, Delaware: International Reading Association, 1968.

Kingston, A. J. Reactions to theoretical models of reading: Implications for teaching reading. In H. Singer and R. E. Ruddell (Eds.), <u>Theoretical models and processes of reading</u>. Newark, Delaware: International Reading Association, 1970.

Kingston, A. J. Disjunctive categories in ephemeral models. In F. B. Davis (Ed.), <u>The literature of research in reading, with</u> <u>emphasis on models</u>. New Brunswick, New Jersey: Graduate School of Education, Rutgers University, 1971.

Klare, G. R. <u>The measurement of readability</u>. Ames, Iowa: Iowa State University Press, 1963.

 Koen, F., Becker, A. L., and Young, R. Psychological reality of the paragraph. Studies in Language and Language Behavior, 1968, Progress Report No. VI, Ann Arbor, Michigan, 482-492.

Lakoff, G. Pronouns and reference, part I and II. Unpublished manuscript, reproduced by the Linguistics Club, Indiana University, 1968.

Langacker, R. W. On pronominalization and the chain of command. In D. A. Reibel and S. A. Shane (Eds.), <u>Modern studies in English:</u> <u>Readings in transformational grammar</u>. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1959.

Langsam, R. S. A factorial analysis of reading ability. <u>Journal Df</u> <u>Experimental Education</u>, 1941, <u>10</u>, 57-63.

Latham, R. O. M. Cognitive synthesis and the comprehension of written language. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Alberta, 1973.

Lees, R. E. <u>The grammar of Friglish nominalizations</u>. Bloomington, Indiana: Research Center in Anthropology, Folklore, and Linguistics, 1960.

Lees, R. B., and Klima, E. S. Rules for English pronominalization. Language, 1963, 39, 17-28.

Lehmann, W. P. Descriptive linguistics. New York: Random House, 1972.

Lesgold, A. M. Effects of pronouns on children's memory for sentences. Journal of Educational Research, 1974, <u>56</u>, 333-338.

- Longold, A. F. Pronominalization: A device for unifyle second in memory. Journal of Verbal Learning and Verbal behavior, 1974, 11, 316-343. (a)
- Lesgold, A. M. Effects of pronouns on children's memory for sectences. Technical Report, 1972/17, Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh, Learning Research and Development Center, 1972. (b)
  - Levin, H., and Kaplan, E. L. Grammatical structure and reading. In H. Lovin and J. F. Williams (Eds.), <u>locate studies on reading</u>. New York: Basic Books, 1970.
  - Liles, B. L. An introductory transformational grammar. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1971.
  - Little, P. An investigation into the relationship between structural ambiguity and reading comprehension. Unpublished M. Ed. thesis, University of Alberta, 1972.
  - Loban, W. D. The language of elementary-school children. Research Report No. 1, Champaign, Illinois: National Council of Teachers of English, 1963.

Ψ.

- Lorge, I. and Thorndike, R. L. <u>The Lorge-Thorndike intelligence tests</u>. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1957.
- Lott, D., and Cronnell, E. The use of redundancy by beginning readers. Technical Report No. 13, 1969, Southwest Regional Laboratory for Educational Research and Development, Inglewood, California.
- Louthan, V. Some systematic grammatical deletions and their effects on reading comprehension. <u>English Journal</u>, 1965, <u>54</u>, 295-299.
- Lovell, K., and Dixon, E. M. The growth of the control of grammar in imitation, comprehension, and production. <u>Journal of Child</u> <u>Psychology and Fsychiatry</u>, 1967, <u>2</u>, 31-39.
- Lyons, J. <u>Introduction to theoretical linguistics</u>. Cambridge, England: Cambridge University Press, 1968.
- MacGinitie, W. H., and Tretiak, R. Measures of sontence complexity as predictors of the difficulty of reading material. <u>Proceedings</u> of the 77th Annual Convention of the American Psychological <u>Association</u>, 1969, <u>1</u>, 557-658.
- MacKay, D. M., and Bever, T. G. In search of ambiguity. <u>Ferception</u> and <u>Psychorhysics</u>, 1957, 2, 193-200.
- Mackworth, J. F. Some models of the reading process: Learners and ekilled readers. In F. B. Davis (Ed.), The literature of research in reading, with emphasis on models. New Frunswick, New Jersey, Graduate School of Education, Eutgers University, 1971.

Maratsos, M. P. The effects of stress on the understanding of pronominal
co-reference in children. Journal of Psycholynguistic Recource, 1973, 2, 1 8.

Melnnos, J. A., Gerrurd, M., Lawrence, J., and Ryckman, J. Rigic and Make-believe. Toronto: Thomas Nelson & Sons, 1952.

McKee, P. The teaching of reading in the elementary school. Eduton, Musinchusetts: Houghton-Mifflin, 1948.

Soliar, J. The psychology of language and reading. Paper presented at the meeting of the international leading Association, Boston, 1968.

- Hehler, J., and Carey, P. Role of surface and base structure in the perception of sentences. <u>Journal of Verbal Learning and</u> <u>Verbal Behavior</u>, 1967, <u>6</u>, 335-338.
- Mehler, J., and Carey, F. The interaction of veracity and syntax in the processing of sentences. <u>Perception and Psychophysics</u>, 1968, 3, 109-111.
- Menyuk, P. Syntactic structures in the language of children. <u>Child</u> Development, 1963, <u>34</u>, 407-422.
- Menyuk, P. <u>Sentences children use</u>. Cambridge, Massachusetts: MIT Press, 1969.
- Menzel, P. The linguistic bases of the theory of writing items for instruction stated in natural language. In J. R. Bormuth, <u>On the theory of achievement test items</u>. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1970.
- Michael, I. <u>English grammatical categories</u>. Cambridge, England: Cambridge University Press, 1970.
- Miller, G. A. Language and communication. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1951.
- Siller, G. A. Come psychological studies of grammar. American Psychologist, 1952, <u>17</u>, 748-752.
- Morrisroe, S. Optional pronominalization. In Binnick et al., (Eis.), <u>Papers from the fifth regional meeting of the Chicage Lin-</u> <u>guistic Cociety</u>, Chicago: Lepartment of Linguistics; Chiversity of Chicago, 1969.
- Mosberg, L., and Chima, F. Comprehension of connected discourse. Technical Report No. 12, 1969, Southwest Regional Laboratory for Educational Research and Development, Inglewood, California.

Murray, L. <u>English grazmar</u>. York, England: Wilson, Spence and Mawman, 1795. Reproduced by Scolar Press, Menston, England, 1968.

- Netwoor, U. The imitation of even by muchine. Defense, 1953, 132, 1933-1973. (a)
- Neisser, U. The multiplicity of thought. Fritish Journal of a genelogy, 1963, 44, 1.446. (b)
- Neisser, U. Cognitive psychology. New York: Appleton Century Crofts, 1967.
- Neisser, E. Delective restinct: A method for the study of yteod. attention: superpresented at the Pth Internations of superof Enychology, Lenion, 1959. Cited by J. R. Bohiffman in Sensory and perceptual aspects of the reading process. In F. B. Davis (Ed.), The <u>literature</u> of respected in pending, with <u>emphasis on reaches</u>. New erunswick, New Jerbey: Graduate School of Education, Rutgers University, 1971.
- Neisser, U., and Weene, P. A note on human recognition of hand-printed characters. Information and Control, 1950, 3, 191-195.
- Niles, C. A. Comprehension skills. Reading Teacher, 1962, 17, 2-7.
- Nurss, J. R. Children's reading: Syntactic structure and comprehension difficulty. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Teacher's College, Columbia University, 1967.
- Nurss, J. E., and Day, D. E. Imitation, comprehension and production of grammatical structures. <u>Journal of Verbal Learning and</u> <u>Verbal Behavior</u>, 1971, 10, 68-74.

O'Donnell' R. C. A study of the correlation between awareness of structural relationships in English and ability in reading comprehension. <u>Journal of Experimental Education</u>, 1963, <u>11</u>, 313-316.

- O'Donnell, R. J., Griffin, W. J., and Norris, R. J. <u>Syntax of Minist-</u> <u>rantem school children: A transformational analysis</u>. Samplin, Illinois: Mational Jouncil of Teachers of Anglish, 1-67.
- Olds, H. F. An experimental study of syntactical flotors influencing children's comprehension of certain complex relationshids. Report No. 1, 1988. Harvard University Research and Levelopment Department.
- Ctto, W., Snester, M., MoNeil, J., and Myers, C. <u>Scoules Leading</u> <u>Instruction</u>. Leading, Mass.: Addison-Wesley, 1974.
- Pick, A. L. Improvement of visual and tactual form discrimination. Journal of Externmental Psychology, 1905, <u>19</u>, 331-339.

3

Pike, K. L. <u>Language in relation to a unified theory of the symptome</u> of <u>human behavior</u>. J vols. Glentage, Samifornia: Summer Institute of Linguistics, 1954, 1955, 1960.

- Fike, K. D. Beyond the neutrice. College Composition and Comparison tion, 1967, 15, 199-135.
- Forwal, F. F. in the so-called pronouns in Euclish. In F. D. Diesen, U. J. (Ed.), Managraphy sprins on Language and Disputsion, No. 19. - Antington, D. C.: Georgetean University Press, Press.
- Fostal, F. M. Annyhearts following. In Minnick et al. Orders, Separative from the fifth regional coefficient the Orderages Dispute 1 in 1992. Alto a feature of the encoded of Dispute Dispute for Orderage. 1993.
- Fortel, F. H. Speck-over phenomena. New Yorks Holt, Minelest 5 Winston, 1971.
- Postal, E. E. Sone further limitations of interpretive theorem of anghors. Jinguistic Inguist, 1972, 5, 343-771.
- Fotter, T. C. Attaxonomy of close research, part 1: Realistility na reading comprehension. Technical Report Net 11, 1999, conthe west Regional Educational Research and Sevelopment, Inglewood, California.
- Prideaux, G. P. Leview of J. Harris, Papers in Structural and transformational linguistics. <u>Modern Language Journal</u>, 1971, 15, 535-535.
- Friestly, J. The rudiments of English grapmar. London: 4. Briffithe. 1761. Reproduced by Garlands Publishing, New York, 1971.
- Rankin, E. F. An evaluation of the cloze procedure as a technique for measuring reading comprehension. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Michigan, 1957.
- Raygor, A. The problem of definition in a non-existing profession: Presidential address. In G. B. Schick and M. M. May (Eds.), <u>Reading: Process and redeport</u>. Milwaukee, Wisconsin: The National Reading Conference, 1971.
- Cobertson, J. F. In investigation of pupil understanding of connectives in reading. Inpublished doctoral dissertation, University of alberta, 1965.

Socine, 2. H. A second history of linguistics. Ionacco disputane, 19. 7.

- nose, d. A. On the pyplic nature of Environ pronominalization. In D. A. Reitel and G. A. Chana (Eds.), Spirm<u>erstation in Continue</u> <u>Reacting in transformational Arabmar</u>. Englewood Cliffle New Jersey: Frentice-Mall, 1909. No.
- Ruddell, R. E. An investigation of the effect of the similarity of so oral and written ratterns of language structure on requira comprehension. Enpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Indiana, 1963.

- Rudofell, 1.1.1.1.ftx.st. 1.trae (stillettee) for an application program (straight and program) of lands are estimationed as a mediate of constant and program (straight and program).
- sector, is is specify the Yew Yest conterposite or prove that yest

.

- oghtendroven, och elementarisen et elementarisen (\* 1000). Store of elementarisen (\* 1000) generen elementarisen (\* 1000) elementarisen (\* 1000) generen och the elementarisen (\* 1000) ender elementarisen (\* 1000) generen och the elementarisen (\* 1000) ender elementarisen (\* 1000)
- Conferences 1. M. Contemposition for the processing of the second s
- erifridze, e. ... do Neimaer, G. Bittern rechnitten generaties. Rimitika a rigad, 1995, <u>e. .</u>.
- Cinger, F., and Addivil, M. 1. (1989). Theory is provedy a party of a second se
- ilistin, 1. 1. fluttetion and gramatical development in callers of a How Angler, how coulter, and be over a could be repair <u>indepoint developmentes, repriséeny</u>. New Yorks of it, concourt & Winsten, 1997.
- amita, A. <u>Enderstar dana realiza</u>. New Yares debt, sinchard statistics 1971.
- aja andar a secondar en la color de la la la companya de la companya de la companya de la companya de la company La companya de la comp
- Spaces, A. L. C. E. College, A. C. Marting, and Spaces and Spaces and Spaces and Spaces and Spaces.
- StrickLand (). (). The Durbance of element of company explores of relation of the Durbance Company and the second company gailing () r (unit of expected of company collected of the lightnetics, Indiana) (consol of coursels of the local of the light.

- The second seco second sec
- (a) A set of the set of the
  - المالية في المالية (1997)، والتركية والمعاد من المالية والمعاد التي ومن المالية (1997). والمالية معها المالية من المالية (1998)
  - a second a s Second a second
  - and a set of the state of the
  - na provinski se politika se politika se politika se politika se politika. Na politika se politika se politika
- a da servición de la servición
- en en la solar de la segura de la servición de servición de la solar de la servición de la servición de la serv Esta de la servición de la serv Esta de la servición de la servi
- en terres a la construcción de la c Internación de la construcción de l Terres de la construcción de la cons
  - a series and a series of the series of th The series of t
- 1. The second secon second se
- and a second second
- and a second second

Weir, R. H. Language in the crib. The Hague: Mouton & Co., 1962.

Wiener, M., and Cromer, W. Reading and reading difficulty: A conceptual analysis. <u>Harvard Educational Review</u>, 1967, 620-643. 0

5

Yoakum, G. C. Revised direction for using the Yoakum readability formula. Unpublished study, University of Pittsburgh, 1948. Cited by G. Elare, The measurement of readability. Ames, Iowa: Iowa State University Press, 1965.

Young, F. M. Development as indicated by a study of pronouns. <u>Journal</u> of Genetic PrycRology, 1942, <u>61</u>, 125-134.

ċ

S. 1







205

£

#### Cloze Directions

You are going to read a story from which some words have been taken out. Whenever you see a blank, you are to try and guess what word has been left out. Write or print this word on the line. Look at your example sheet (hold up correct sheet). Here is an example.

The \_\_\_\_\_ began to moo.

What word might fit in the blank? (accept answers) Lèt's try another one.

Red and \_\_\_\_\_ are my favorite colors.

What word would you want to write on the line? (Accept answers from the children). Now we see sometimes more than one word can be correct. Most of the time only one word has been taken out of the story. But if you want to put a name on the blank line you may need a title such as Mrs. Smith or Mr. Jones. This is the only time you will use more than one word. All the blanks are exactly the same length, but the words that fill them may be long or short.

Try to fill in every blank. If you cannot think of a word go on to the next blank. Don't be afraid to guess. Watch for punctuation marks such as periods. They tell you where a sentence ends. When you finish go back and try to fill in any blank you skipped. If you want to change an answer cross out the word on the blank and write the new one above it.

If you don't know how to spell a word, hold up your hand. I will come to your desk and spell it for you.

Before we begin the big story let's practice on the small story. Look at example 3. I want you to try and fill in the three blanks in the story. Ready? Begin. (Allow time for completion of the task. Ascertain all children understand the task.)

	••• •••
<b>1</b> .	The began to moo.
2.	Red and are my favorite color's.
3.	The two bears were for something to eat. The
•	mother found some Just as they started to eat
	another bear came.
1	" out of my berries," said the big bear.
	• •

.

# THE STORM (TAR-C Form 1)

One afternoon Jimmy was working in his garden. Mitten, the cat, was playing near by. Jimmy's father was in bed with a bad cola.

Mrs. Green came out of the lighthouse and said to Jimmy, <u>IA</u> will not be visiting <u>7A</u> grandmother today. A storm is coming. <u>IB</u> just heard the news on the <u>Nil</u> <u>"Mother," Jimmy asked, "May <u>IA</u> play out in the rain if <u>IB</u> put on the new raincoat <u>IB</u> bought for <u>2E</u>?"</u>

"Not this time," answered \_\_\_\_\_7B \_\_\_\_mother. "The man on the radio said the \_\_\_\_\_Nil \_\_\_\_will be bad."

Hrs. Green went down to the dock. Mitten went with <u>2A</u>
First, <u>IA</u> moved the boat into the boathouse and shut the windows. Then <u>IB</u> went back into the house.

Jimmy took Mitten into the lighthouse. A small drop of rain fell. The clouds were getting darker. <u>2A</u> helped <u>7B</u> mother shut the <u>Nil</u> in the house.

"The storm is coming very quickly," said Mrs. Green.

As the two of <u>2B</u> looked out the window, Mrs. Green pulled down her hat. <u>1A</u> saw that the lake was not blue anymore. The waves were splashing up <u>Nil</u> the island. Soon rain began to fall hard.

Mrs. Greek went into the lighthouse, took off \_\_\_\_\_7A\_\_\_\_ raincoat, and turned on the radio.

Mrs. Green said, "\_\_\_\_lA\_\_\_\_ hope all the small boats get to the docks safely. \_\_\_\_\_7A\_\_\_\_ friend Judy \_\_\_\_\_Nil\_\_\_\_ Sailing today." Jimmy answered, "<u>IA</u> hope so too. The small boats can upset very easy. <u>IB</u> must go up in the lighthemse and turn on the lamp."

When Jimmy climbed to the top of the lighthouse, Mrs. Green went with <u>2A</u>. The water looked wild. <u>1A</u> looked out over <u>Nil</u> lake with the field glasses. <u>1B</u> could see the small boats trying to find a safe place to stay.

Mrs. Green said, "<u>IA</u> won't get much sleep tonight. A boat may get into trouble and <u>IB</u> will have to keep watch. Anything can happen in such a <u>Nil</u> storm." She looked at Jimmy and said, <u>IA</u> have to go to bed."

Jimmy didn't like going to bed but it was best to listen to <u>7B</u> mother. It took <u>2B</u> a long time to fall asleep.

The next morning Jimmy was up early. Mrs. Green was <u>Nil</u> the kitchen making breakfast. Putting on <u>7B</u> new jacket, Jimmy ran into the moom. Outside it was sunny again.

"Do <u>1B</u> think there will be another storm today?"

Mrs. Green smiled. "No, Jimmy," <u>IA</u> said. "The storm has blown away. Anyway, <u>IB</u> have a long list of <u>Nil</u> for <u>2B</u> to do."

Jimmy hung <u>7A</u> head. <u>1A</u> liked watching the stormy seas and listening to the wind. <u>1B</u> could still remember the crashing waves. Jimmy wanted to stay. But when mother tells <u>2A</u> to work there is no way of getting out of it. Jimmy's cat ran to <u>2A</u>. Then <u>1A</u> picked up a rake and <u>N11</u> for the garden.

.

Koy: 1,2,7 = respective categories of anaphora included in the study.
A = anaphora/antecedent separated by 0-2 propositions
B = anaphora/antecedent separated by 3-5 propositions

211.

# THE LITTLE FOR (TAR-C Form z)

Mr. Painter, Judy and Jim had left the car to take a walk in the woods. Beside a big tree Mr. Painter found a taby fox. Its eyes were shut.

"Is something wrong with the fox?" asked Jim. "It is so

"Yes" 7A father answered, "<u>IB</u> think <u>IB</u> needs food. Something must have happened to the mother. This for won't live if left alone here."

Judy and Jim petted the fox but the <u>Nill</u> real and move.

They asked, "May <u>IB</u> take it home? The for needs help. <u>IB</u> will take care of it until it gets owther."

Mr. Painter picked up the fox, put <u>shift</u> in his poat, and took it to the car. Then <u>IB</u> and the kize sturted Nil

Judy looked at Jim and said, "Maybe \_\_\_\_\_\_ should \_\_\_\_\_\_ should \_\_\_\_\_\_\_ should \_\_\_\_\_\_\_

Judy went to the kitchen to get some <u>N11</u> for the fox. <u>IA</u> placed the food beside the fox. Then <u> $_{12}$ </u> sat down and watched <u> $_{24}$ </u>. The fox opened its eyes but dia not make a sound.

Jim said, "\_\_\_\_\_ IA \_\_\_\_ think the fox should be left alons.

Then it will est momething."

Jim and dudy oft the garage, but the next seriing they were back early. Mill of the food was gone. Their plan had worked. The fox sit watching thea.

Jim said to the fox, " 7A nose is cold and wet! A will be better soon."

Then Mr. Painter came into the garage. In called at the little fox which was now standing on its feet. Jim and Judy were standing <u>Nil</u> the fox watching every move.

Er. Painter said, "<u>1A</u> think the for is going to get well. That was a kind thing the two of you did for it. Just look at <u>7B</u> pretty eyes!"

The little fox kept on growing stronger. Before long it began to act like a pet. Jim and Judy played with the fox as if <u>lA</u> were a puppy.

One day Mr. Painter said to Jim and Judy, "The fox is growing fast. <u>1A</u> must keep it tied up in the yard. <u>1B</u> might jump over the fence and run after the chickens."

The <u>Nil</u> day Judy and Jim were eating breakhast in The <u>Nil</u> day Judy and Jim were eating breakhast in The house when <u>IA</u> heard a loud noise. Judy rushed to the window. When <u>IA</u> looked out, the fox was chasing the chickens and Mr. Painter was chasing the fox. Taking <u>75</u> shoes she ran to help.

Jim rushed outside but by this time the fox had run away. He tooked around and saw \_\_\_\_\_75\_\_\_ father. Mr. Painter looked at

Jin ant gave the maint of the low," In

### onid.

Just then duly some running out of the house. Jim told 24. the and news. The fox must be set free in the bill Kr. Fainter knew the kids were very sod. [14.] For boll at the fox and sold, "\_\_\_\_\_\_\_\_ H\_\_\_\_\_\_ know a wild fox is not happy when it is kept tied up. To we must give \_\_\_\_\_\_\_ s chance to be free."

Judy and Jim felt and, but they knew that 76 father was river. They Nil the fox a bir breakfast. Then 18 rode off with their father in the car.

When the three of them found a good place in the woods the fox was set free. It ran into the woods. The Fainters stood by the car and watched <u>xE</u>. Judy closed <u>7A</u> eyes and when the opened them the fox was gone.

fey: see previous sheets

- 1 I<sub>4</sub>

 $\odot$ 

### Multiple Choice .uestions

215

The Lont Turtle

(TAR MC Form . )

On your lank you have a story and two answer sheets. After you read the story 1 am going to ask you some questions and you discontine the answer on the answer sheets.

First, print your name at the top of each answer sheet (check that they depit print their reases on the story sheets).

NOW I WANT YOU TO REAL THE STORY. BEGIN. (Allow time for reading.)

Now let's take Answer Sheet #1.

Put your finger on line 3 in the story. Find the word that tells where Tom and Jill were going. Circle the word in number 1 cn your answer sheet. (Check)

Fut your finger on line 11. Find the word <u>her</u>. On your answer sheet in number 2 circle the word that means the same as <u>ner</u>.

Put your finger on line 12. Find the word which tells what

Now let's begin the next answer sheet.

### The least fligt to grant 1

But your Chagor on Itan First the ways they are answer after the container. the weed that are not the sources on 6. I. . I 7. dr. ., Elm R., Yon, S. year and present temperature these is a contract the wave constant temperature in server ade turble and corrected and to pupper do normal were energy 2 N. MCMAR, C. Mc. المحصح المستحج والمستح 2010 your finder a line los offens the end to the be where finders the turble and places the work this humber your just anywest should المتاتين ويالأ الإساكيني وترك u izna antenna dalente الهرين المنطار فالما وتغمد way, his, ill, his Put your linger on line (c). Find the word that tells where me. Set . Jill, and for went to gick up the turtly and simple the word in number Ly on your answer the set المحقا والمرق 20, 40, Lò, 13 27, 20, 26, 25

.

 $= \sum_{i=1}^{n} \left( f_{i} - f_{i} \right) = \frac{1}{2} \left( f_{i} - f_{i} \right)$ 

- - land and a second se
  - and the second second
  - a de la composición d Composición de la comp
  - a tata para di tata

# The Lost Turtle

. *X* 

,

	l	Mrs. Coats, Jill, and Tom were taking the train home	1
	2	after a long visit on the farm. Tom and Jill were happy to	2
	3	be going home again. Tom wanted to show his friends the new	3
47	4	turtle he found on the farm.	
	5	Tom said, "I know the first thing I'm going to do when	5 - 1
	6	I get back home. I'm going to find something for my turtle	6 (
	7	to live in. I think I will take a look at him now. fill,	7
	8	where did you put his box?"	8
	9	"I don't see it," said Jill. "we each have a snowman	9
	10	box but I don't see the little box for the turtle."	10
	11	Jill helped her brother look all over their car in the	11
	12	train. But they couldn't find the turtle anywhere.	12
	13	"On Tom!" said Jill. "I'm sorry your turtle is lost. I	<b>1</b> 3
	14	know how much you liked it."	14
	15	All at once Tom cried, "My turtle isn't lost. I know	15
	1 <i>5</i> .	where the box is. I didn't bring it. I put it on a chair at	16
	<u> 1</u> 7 -	the farmhouse before we left today. Then I came off without	17,
	13		13
	19	Mrs. Coats said, "Tom, maybe our friends will send you"	19
	20	the curtle. Itll phone the farm when we get home. Itll ask	2C
· •	21.	them to send you the turtle right away."	ā.l.
	L.L.	Tom sat down and began looking out the window. But he	22
•	23	couldn't help thinking about his pet.	
	 24	At last the trip was over and the Coat's family was	24
	25	home. Mrs. Coats went to phone the farm to ask for the turth	a.25
	26	By the phone was a note for the family from Mr. Coate. The	25

	27	note said that the turtle was being shipped by plane and the	27	
	28	family could pick it up at the airport.	28	•
	29	Jill and Tom yelled happily.	29	
•	30	Tom cried, "My turtle came by plane."	30	
	31	Mrs. Coats, Jill, and Tom got into the car and went to	31	
	32	the airport. Soon, Mrs. Coats stopped the car.	/32	
	33.	"Jill, you wait in the car," said Mrs. Coats. "Tom	33 -	
	34	and I will go get the turple. We know where to go so it	34	
	35	won't take us long."	- 35	
	36	In five minutes Tom and his mother were back.	36	
	37	Tom cried, "I got my turtle. A letter came with it."	37	
	38	Tom laughed when the letter was read.	38	
	39	"Our friends wrote that I have the fastest turtle in	39	
,	40	the world," he said.	40	
	41	The next morning Tom and Jill were up early. They	41	
	42	couldn't wait to show the turtle to their friends. Jill	42	
	43	brought some food for the turtle but it was not in the box.	43	
	44	Mrs. Coats and Tom came running from the kitchen.	44	
	45	Mrs. Coats said, "Tom, you look in this room. Jill	45	
	46	and I will look upstairs. The turtle couldn't have gone too	48	
	47	far. He must be here somewhere."	47	
	48	A short time later Jill let out a yell.	48	
	49	"Here it is?" she said.	49	
	50	Jill had found the turtle swimming around in the goldfish	50 .	
	51	rowl. Jill put her hand into the bowl and lifted the turtle	51 1	
	52 .	out. Then Mrs. Coats took the turtle downstairs to Tom.	52	
••				

						;			0	- 2	20
				6							0
	-							1	2		•
			e	Answer	Sheet Nu	uber 1 (	TAR-MC	Form 2)		2	
									•		. <sup></sup>
						- Name:	р			9	
					•	0	÷				·- · .
	1.		friends								
	<u></u> ,	a.				•					
r	¢.	b.	home						· 0		4
•		c.	turtle								• 0
			farm						•• .		
		d.	larm	1		<i>e,</i>		s international sectors and the			
		•					2 A	- <u> </u>			• •
	2.	a.	brother	:				•			
		Ъ.	car			:		·	•		о. <sup>0</sup>
		с.	Jill					* *:	:	•	
				анан сарана Стала стала ста Стала стала стал			C <sub>C2</sub>			2 . ·	
		d.	train	e 0	5			. 1			
				ć.		<b>.</b>	. с Ф	*		<u>,</u>	
	3.,	a.	train		3			5		с. С	
	~	ь.	car				,	с.	-		•
			0					ċ		c	
		с.	brother		0	e	ę.	. 0	- o		
		đ.	turtle	c	,			2 2	· · ·		•
•			. n			0			• •		12 A.
				<i>1</i> 2	4	5	•		6		

υ

Answer Sheet Number 2 (TAR-MC Form 2) Name: 1. a. Jill 🗸 b. Tom - 1B c. Mrs. Coats d. the turtle  $\mathcal{O}$ e . 2. a., Mrs. Coats 2B b. J<u>111</u> c. Tom /d. the turtle 0 3. a. Tom b.- the turtle 1A c. Mrs. Coats /d. J111. 1 a. car 2 ÷., lome Ъ. c. xoɗ . d. farm e . r 3. . a. J11 . . b. Mrs. Coats 1A c. the turtle d. Tom

6. Aa. Tom b. J111 ° 7A c. Mrs. Coats d. the turtle 7. a. J<u>111</u> b. Mrs. Coats  $\mathbf{1B}$ c. the turtle √d. Tom 8. a. the turtle b. J111 lΒ Pc. Tom d. Mrs. Coats 14 9. a. box b. chair c. train d. home 10. a. Mrs. Coats Vb. Tom 2A c. the turtle d. 5111 2 11. a. the turtle 6. Jil بلأ /c. Tom

222

d. Mrs. Coats

κ.	12. a	•	Mrs. Coats			1997 - 19
	-/ b	•	Tom .,	7B		
	c	•	the turtle			
	d	٤.	Jill			
			· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·		-	
	13 <u>.</u> a	L .	farm "			
	d		airport		•	
	d	· ·	home		- - -	•
., <sup>1</sup>	Ċ	1.	train			
			4		,	
	14. a					•
۰ <del>د</del>	<b>,</b> -∕ Έ	•	Mrs. Coats	• <u>1</u> A		
: :	Ċ	2.	Tom			
	c	i.	the turtle			
<b>,</b> <sup>1</sup> -		3.	Mrs. Coats and Jill	ت		
·		5.	Tom and Jill	2B		
	c	2.	Tom and the turtle			
	10	1,	Mrs. Coats and Tom	۱.		
	.16. é	â.	Tom			
	1	D.	the turtle	2A		
• .	C	с,	Jill .			
	•	i.	Mrs. Coats			ය
3		a.	Mrs. Coats	g .		. ·
		-	J111	1B		
	· 7	с.'	Tom	•		•
	, ,	d.	the turtle			•

.,

.\*

223

٦

ć

. .

	18. a.	J111					
	√Ъ.	Tom	• * <u>*</u>		1B		
. • • •	с.	the turtle	,				-
	d.	Mrs. Coats	•			 	
	19. ε	Tom and the	turtle				
	ъ.	Jill and the	e turtle		7B		
	<b>c.</b>	Mrs: Coats a	and Tom	۰.			
<b>v</b> :	/ a.	Tom and Jil	1				
	° 20. a.	water	-				
•	b.	milk					
· .	, C .	breakfast	-				
•	ġ.	food					
	21. a.	Mrs. Coats		-		<u></u>	
. • .	~b.	the turtle			lA		
	c.	J111		•		•	
	đ.	Tom					
	22. a.	Nrs. Coats	•	`ـــ			
	b.	1111			J.A.	· ·	
	~c.	Tom	. • .		,		
	d.	the turtle					
	23. a.	Jill			U	ی ب	
	∕Ъ.	the turtle		4	lB	Tatip Tatip	:
	c.	Tom	· · ·				
•	đ,	rire. Coats					
		*	, •				

224

С

- 24. /a. Jill
  - b. Tom

A

В

- c. Mrs. Coats
- d. the turtle

KET: 1,2,7 = respective categories of anaphora included in the study.

71.

j 225

C

- = anaphora/antecedent separated by 0-2 propositions
- = anaphora/antecedent separated by 3-5 propositions
- = appropriate answer

# Multiple Choice Questions

# The rice

### (TAR-MC Form 1)

On your desk you have a story and two answer sheets. After you read the story I am going to ask you some questions and you will circle the answer on the answer sheets.

" First, print your name at the top of each answer sheet (check that they don't print their names on the story sheet).

NOW I WANT YOU TO READ THE STORY. HEGIN. (Allow time for reading.)

Now let's take answer sheet #1.

Put your finger on line 1. Find the word that tells the name of the witch and circle the word in number  $\frac{h}{2}$  on your answer sheet.

Fut your finger on line 3. Find the word that tells the name of the cat and circle the word in number 2 on your answer sheet.

Put your finger on line 8. Find the word It and on your andwar sheet in number 3 circle the word that means the same as it.

	The Mice (cont.)
	Fut your finger on line Find the word
	. On your answer sheet in number circus
	the word that means the same as
	6, I; I, I
	5, ua, 2, ue
	9, I, D, I
v	Put your finger on line 13. Find the word that tells why Grackle wanted
	to stay in the house and circle the word in number 4 on your answer sheet.
	17, she, 5, she
	18, her, 6, her
	20, he, 7, he
U.	Put your finger on line 20. Find the word which tells who Grackle called
	and circle the word in number 8 on your answer sheet.
	21, him, 9, him
	22, my, 10, my
C	TURN OVER THE SHEET
	ja, I, 11, I
	2, you, 12, you <sup>.</sup>
	3, же, 13, же
	Put your finger on line 5 and find the word which tells what awakened
	Grackle and circle the word in number 14 on your answer sheet.
	7, her, 15, her
	7, mis, 16, his
	10, the second she, number 17, the second she
	Fur your finger on line 11 and find the word that vells on what brackle
	fell and circle the word in number 18 on your answer sheet.

12, you, 19, you

13, my, 20, my

.

•

,

15, 'us, 21, us

16, 1, 22, I

17, he, 23, ho

19, she, 24. she

1 2 2 228

.

, ,

THE MICE

1	Once upon a time there was a witch whose name was Crackle.	ì
یں جب	She lived with two dogs, Ginger and Sam, and a Large cat mimed	A.,
.4	Fluffy. They lived in a house at the edge of the forest.	,s
1.	Crackle's house was very olt.	14
	on storry mights or only would say to Fluify. ". one-	
	. times I think thes house is getting too old for the two of us.	t ·
· · · ·	' Haybe we should live in a new place."	7
3	Flurfy would answer, "Yes, the house is eld and it lacks	÷.
L	in a storm, but I like this broken-down place. Except on	9
10		10
11		
1.2		- 
عد ز		· · · ·
	The owner that the	1
14		15
		نے وہ جانب
	was tired. She had been shopping and day for a new hat.	s y Ar st
		1
	subth.	
23	Crackle went to the door and called, "Fluffyre, is came	
21	running in a second. Crackle said to him, floor in (inc	- A
2	2 cupboard. Someone has taken my bread and choese."	- 

129

.

\$

Enffy analyst the supported of "Michi" he call. "I month the i micel" Fluffy looket at Grackie and maid, "fou go to bet. .) 1 will stay, up and take care of the mice. Then we will both 3 ι. Do happy." The cat shi in the curtoard. 4 4 Unachle turned off the style and west to test. The west · '+ no time to come te l'animp at ominal out mily, anteres wakened her. Fluidy last jumped from the blaing place on t 17 3 was running after the size and burning into everything in the array druckie jumped out of best and ran downstative. N 11 At the bottom of the stairs she missed a step of the tripped over Fluffy and fell on the floor. Struckle bosses of Floff's 12 . بغنا and asken, "Did you witch those mice?" "No," said Fluifly, "I tried my best. But I aid frighten . تريد phen away." . کی 15 "Good," said Graphie. "Now both of us our have a good 18 might's sleep. I am tired, and it's getting very site. ..... 11 Flairy was sorry that he had not claubt the mace. Unachie and Fluidy as some food before count back to bea. 2 Then Spacele jud out the light and she wont upstairs. - + 1 - C Sladif speksed commonairs. Cos pains for dance stapped Minis is petter 7 as said. The mice/M 

a ...

Station of the Art Contract of the State

## haun

- in the strategy
  - te a constant
    - 1997 1997 1995 1995 1995 1995 1995 1995 1995 1995 1995 1995 1995 1995 1995 1995 -
- - . .!. ...
  - a second
  - en de la companya de la comp
  - an see Matalay
- s a State

c. G	am	Sheet Numb	Kame:	VAR-MC F	° 'orm 1) 				
с. G	am rackle inger		Name:	<b>-</b>					
с. G	rackle inger		lA		_ &				
с. G	rackle inger		AL		_ &		· .		
с. G	rackle inger								
c. G	inger	ана на							
			0					9 <b>.</b> .	
d.F	luffy		2						
		. <sup>1</sup>		•					
2. a. C	rackle and Cinge	er (						· · ·	
	am and Ginger	•	2A			,			
	luffy and Sam	•				0			
	rackle and Fluf:	ſy		• •					
,	· · ·	9							
3.∕a. F	luffy .	j. F					÷		
	rackle		18						
<b>c</b> ., G	inger	1		12					
d. S	am -	· ·							
4. a. o	ld		* 4.						
	uiet o		lB				·	•	
	.ev					. ' 2		1	
¢.									
	,					•			
Sales C	rackle						*		
b. G	inger	. '	1B	/					
c. F	lufry	5 5	j. B			G .			
d. S	)am	ć,			×				

		•		
			233	
ó. a.	Sam			( 5)) 40
ъ.	Fluffy	. :	<b>7</b> B	
/c.	Crackle			
d.	Ginger			۰.
7. ε.	Ginger			
b.	Crackle		lA	
с.	Sam			· .
√d.	Fluffy	2		<u>`</u> ,
8. ε.	Ginger	•	¢	
Þ.	Sam			
C.	Crackle			
d.	Fluffy	•		
ý. a.	Sam			
. b.	Fluffy		2 2A	5
с.	Ginger			
Q.	Grackle	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	<b>C</b>	
- 10 a.	Fluity	er L	0	
ی ع	Ginger		7B	່. ຊ
	Orackle			
đ	Sam			
ll. e.	Crackle	e e		
/`o.	Fluffy		1B	
С.	Sam			
ċ.	Ginger			

<ul> <li>12. a. Flutty</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>i. Sam</li> <li>i. Grackle</li> <li>i. Plufty and Sam</li> <li>i. Plufty and Ginger</li> <li>d. Grackle and Clarger</li> <li>i. Flutty and Ginger</li> <li>i. Iight</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>i. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>i. Crackle</li> <li>d. Flutty</li> <li>i. Crackle</li> <li>i. Flutty</li> <li>i. Crackle</li> <li>j. Crackle</li> <li>j. Grackle</li> <li>j. Grackle</li> <li>j. Grackle</li> <li>j. Grackle</li> <li>j. Sam</li> <li>j. Grackle</li> </ul>	· .	•		т. <b>0</b> И
<ul> <li>b. Ginger IA</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Crackle</li> <li>13. A. Grackle and Fluffy</li> <li>b. Fluffy and Sam IB</li> <li>c. Fluffy and Ginger</li> <li>d. Crackle and Ginger</li> <li>i. A. Boises</li> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>2B</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>16. ä. Ginger</li> <li>b. Grackle</li> <li>7A</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>17. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>18</li> <li>c. Grackle</li> <li>a. Ginger</li> </ul>		0 <sup>-1</sup>		234
<ul> <li>b. Ginger IA</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Crackle</li> <li>13. A. Grackle and Fluffy</li> <li>b. Fluffy and Sam IB</li> <li>c. Fluffy and Ginger</li> <li>d. Crackle and Ginger</li> <li>i. A. Boises</li> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>2B</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>16. ä. Ginger</li> <li>b. Grackle</li> <li>7A</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>17. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>18</li> <li>c. Grackle</li> <li>a. Ginger</li> </ul>		, , ,	x	
<ul> <li>b. Ginger IA</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Crackle</li> <li>13. A. Grackle and Fluffy</li> <li>b. Fluffy and Sam IB</li> <li>c. Fluffy and Ginger</li> <li>d. Crackle and Ginger</li> <li>i. Grackle and Ginger</li> <li>i. Light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>i. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>i. Grackle</li> <li>i. Grackle</li> <li>i. Fluffy</li> <li>i. Sam</li> <li>i. Grackle</li> <li>i. Fluffy</li> <li>i. Fluffy</li> <li>i. Fluffy</li> <li>i. Grackle</li> <li>i. Fluffy</li> <li>i. Grackle</li> <li>i. Fluffy</li> <li>i. Grackle</li> <li>j. Fluffy</li> <li>i. Grackle</li> <li>i. Fluffy</li> <li>i. Grackle</li> <li>i. Fluffy</li> <li>i. Grackle</li> <li>i. Fluffy</li> <li>i. Grackle</li> <li>j. Fluffy</li> <li>j. Grackle</li> <li>j. Fluffy</li> </ul>	12. a.	Fluffy	ţi r	
<ul> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>/d. Crackle</li> <li>13. /a. Crackle and Fluffy</li> <li>b. Fluffy and Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy and Ginger</li> <li>d. Crackle and Ginger</li> <li>id. crackle and Ginger</li> <li>id. a. moises</li> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>28</li> <li>/c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>16. é. Ginger</li> <li>b. Grackle</li> <li>74</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>17. a. San</li> <li>fluffy</li> <li>18</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>a. Fluffy</li> <li>a. San</li> <li>b. Grackle</li> <li>c. San</li> <li>c. San</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul>	`, .	•	٨٢	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
<ul> <li>/d. Crackle</li> <li>13. /a. Crackle and Fluffy</li> <li>b. Fluffy and Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy and Ginger</li> <li>d. Crackle and Ginger</li> <li>i4. a. noises</li> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>28</li> <li>/e. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>i6. d. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>74</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>19</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>11</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>12</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>11</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>11</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>11</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>11</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul>	D.	ý		C .
<ul> <li>13. A. Crackle and Fluffy</li> <li>b. Fluffy and Sam</li></ul>	c.	Sam "	5   0	
<ul> <li>13. / a. Crackle and Fluffy</li> <li>b. Fluffy and Sam IB</li> <li>c. Fluffy and Ginger</li> <li>d. Crackle and Ginger</li> <li>14. a. noises</li> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger 2B</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>16. d. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. fluffy</li> <li>17. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>18</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>19</li> <li>10. Sam</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>11. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>12. Sam</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>13. Sam</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>14. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>11. Sam</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul>	/d.	Crackle		е — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — —
<ul> <li>b. Flüffy and Sam</li> <li>c. Fluffy and Ginger</li> <li>d. Crackle and Ginger</li> <li>i. a. noises</li> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> </ul> 15. a. Sam <ul> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 16. ä. Ginger <ul> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 17. a. Sam <ul> <li>b. Flurfy</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 18 <ul> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 19 <ul> <li>10. Crackle</li> <li>a. Sam</li> <li>b. Plurfy</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 19 <ul> <li>19</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 19 <ul> <li>10. Crackle</li> <li>a. Sam</li> <li>b. Plurfy</li> <li>b. Plurfy</li> </ul> 10. Crackle <ul> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul> 11. C. Crackle <ul> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul> 12. Crackle <ul> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul> 13. C. Crackle <ul> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul> 14. C. Crackle <ul> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul> 15. Crackle <ul> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul> 16. Crackle <ul> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul> 17. Sam <ul> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul> 18. C. Crackle <ul> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul> 18. C. Crackle <ul> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul>		~ ~		2 D C
<ul> <li>b. Fluffy and Ginger</li> <li>c. Fackle and Ginger</li> <li>i. a. noises</li> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>i5. a. San</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>i6. a. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. San</li> <li>c. San</li> <li>c. Fluffy</li> <li>i7. a. San</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>i8</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>i9</li> <li>i19</li> <li>i10</li> <li>i10</li> <li>i10</li> <li>i11</li> <li>i11</li></ul>	13. / a.	Crackle and Fluffy	۰۰ ۲	
<ul> <li>d. Crackle and Ginger</li> <li>14. a. noises</li> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>16. ä. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>7A</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>17. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>18</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> <li>i. Fluffy</li> <li>18</li> </ul>	. b.	Fluffy and Sam	ĴΒ.	υ
<ul> <li>d. Crackle and Ginger</li> <li>14. a. noises</li> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>16. ä. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>7A</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>17. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>18</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> <li>i. Fluffy</li> <li>18</li> </ul>	с.	Fluffy and Ginger	·	
<ul> <li>14. a. noises</li> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>2B</li> <li>C. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>16. a. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>7A</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>17. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluify</li> <li>18</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>a. Ginger</li> </ul>		· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	ъ.,	
<ul> <li>14. a. noises</li> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>2B</li> <li>C. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>16. a. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>17. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>18</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul>	d.	Crackle and Ginger		
<ul> <li>b. mice</li> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> </ul> 15. a. Sam <ul> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 16. a. Ginger <ul> <li>b. Orackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 17. a. San <ul> <li>b. Fluffy</li> </ul> 18 <ul> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 19 <ul> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 18 <ul> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 18 <ul> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> </ul> 18 <ul> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul>			:	a
<ul> <li>c. light</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>lé. a. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l?. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>lB</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>a. Ginger</li> </ul>				
<ul> <li>c. Hight</li> <li>d. tired</li> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>i6. a. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>i7. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>iB</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>a. Ginger</li> </ul>	•.ور م	mice	- · ·	а а а а а а а а а
<ul> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l6. e. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l7. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>lB</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Cinger</li> </ul>	° <b>с.</b>	light		
<ul> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l6. e. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l7. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>lB</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Cinger</li> </ul>	d.	tired	0	s,
<ul> <li>15. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Ginger</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l6. a. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l7. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>lB</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>a. Ginger</li> </ul>	с			
<ul> <li>b. Ginger 2B</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l6. a. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>i7. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>lB</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>a. Ginger</li> </ul>	15. a.	Sam	2	
<ul> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l6. å. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l7. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>lB</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>a. Cinger</li> </ul>	°	Ginger	2B	
<ul> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l6. a. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l7. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>lB</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>a. Cinger</li> </ul>				
<ul> <li>l6. å. Ginger</li> <li>b. Crackle</li> <li>c. San</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>l7. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>lB</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul>	✓ c.	Crackle		
<ul> <li>b. Crackle 7A</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>17. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>1B</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul>	۵.	Fluffy		
<ul> <li>b. Crackle 7A</li> <li>c. Sam</li> <li>d. Fluffy</li> <li>17. a. Sam</li> <li>b. Fluffy</li> <li>1B</li> <li>c. Crackle</li> <li>d. Ginger</li> </ul>		° .		
c. Sam d. Fluffy 17. a. Sam o. Fluffy 18 c. Crackle d. Ginger	ić. å.	Ginger	÷	
d. Fluffy 17. a. Sam b. Fluffy 1B d. Ginger	b.	Crackle	<b>7</b> A	
d. Fluffy 17. a. Sam b. Fluffy 1B d. Ginger	÷Č.	Sam		c ,
17. a. Sam b. Fluify c. Cracklo d. Ginger		· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·		
o. Fluify lB d. Ginger				
o. Fluify lB d. Ginger	3.0	Som		
d. Ginger		·		
d. Ginger			ΤB	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
d. Ginger	/ c.	Crackle	:	•
		Ginger		
	•	<i></i>	235	
-------------------------	----------------	---------------------------------------	---	
	4			
18. a. b <del>o</del> d	1. 1.	<i>.</i> .		
b. stairs				
c. floor			en e	
d. step		o ,		
19. Ja. Fluffy				
b. Sam	14			
c. Ginger		alt and		
d. Crackle				
20. a. Grackle	`			
b. Fluffy	7A		ن ۲	
c. Sam		•		
d. Ginger	-			
21. a: Crackle and Sam		•	• •	
√b. Crackle and Fluffy	° 2B		с	
c. Crackle and Ginger		·		
d. Ginger and Sam	3 ·		0	
22. a. Fluffy	,			
o. Ginger		4. (* 14.) 4.		
/c. Crackle	18	· .		
c. Sam	е.		• •	
23. /s. Fluffy		a. A	e di si	
b. Sam	1A .		<i>w</i>	
c. Ginger	• •	•		
d. Crackle	2 <sup>1</sup>	-	• .	
		· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	. • • • •	

24. a. Sam 5. Ginger 1A ⁄c. Crackle

d. Fluffy

- <sup>-1</sup>.

ŝ.

NET: 1,2,7 = respective categories of anaphora included in the study.

= anaphors/antecedent separated by 0-2 propositions

- anaphora/amecodent separated by 3-5 propositions
- = appropriate answer

## APPENDIX B

с **и** 

 $\odot$ 

# Word Recognition Test

### Word Recognition Test

bir tions:

On your deak you will find some papers with words on them. (Hold up the Word Recognition Test so that all children can see it.) Write or print your name at the top. (Point to the place provided for the children's names and ascertain all have completed this task.) All the lines on the papers are numbered and there are four words on each line. (Point to the numbered lines.) I am going to say a word from each line and I want you to draw a circle around the word I say. Remember I will only say one word from each numbered line. Are there any questions? (pause for questions) Number 1. smiled-smiled

words are pronounced. (See master list)

1.	where	next	smiled	petted
2.	listening	at .	Mould	cheese
3.	broken	floor	<b>8088</b>	lived
4.	island	knew	went	trouble
5.	us	jacket ~	frighten	care
6.	awakened	еуев	give	think
7.	hat	name	morning	walk
8.	pretty	large	he	bread
<b>9.</b>	there	upstairs	dogs	found
10.	still	both	ate	tired
11.	leaks	woods	outside	day
12.	she	boat	ran	ĩo
13. :	list	waves	back	except
and to o	, trác	when	took	man
15.	called '	Тно	splashing	darker
16.	80 <b>0n</b>	bluo	food	happen
17.	remember	with	just	them
18.	Crackle	. small	hung	the

	19.	head	kept	800	began
	20.	turned	watch	амау	hoe
	21.	right	into	safe	yos.
	22.	his	they	breaking	sleep
	23.	wind	from	stay	on
	24.	liked	way	blown	empty
	25.	news	phone	until	anyway
	25.	red	do	such	Came
	27.	off	but	herself	witch
• •	28.	a. 9	picked	lost	with
	29.	Jinmy	find	anymore	edgə
	30.	ШЗУ	light	set	very
	31.	turtle	me	house	kitchen
- - -	-32.	Ъа	lake	this	stood
	33 <b>.</b>	won't	bad	field	out
	34 <b>.</b>	helped	. ອອດ	will	
	35.	mother	time	visit	Fluffy
	36.	yelled	show	clouds	anything
	•	,			

,

240

	37.	better	BOM&	1t	farm
		told	mico	.hungry	did
		baby	noises	110	J1m
	40.	friends	quiet	mi 98	lmow
	41.	caught	animal	should	their
	42.	beside	right	car	NOM
а	43.	onco	chance	wanted	around
	lsts .	sun	big	happy	first
	4 <b>5</b> .	three	ramily	isn <sup>°</sup> t	hurried
	46.	shine	rode	Mrs. Painter	nerð
	47.	coat	old	without	airport
	48.	over	carried	each	had
	29.	live	start	Jill	wait
	· 50.	shop	home	breakfast	downstaire
•	51.	naking	night	again	stairs
	52.	bumping	trip	door	wrong
	53.	ell	garage	lox	him
	54.	those	jump	bottom	הניח

, ,

bada

		243

73.	room	crashing	upon	atorm
74-	afternoon	cat	®aøy	пөк
75.	wait	21	bød	уоц
76.,	ðy .	Mitten	im <b>v</b> ↔	end
77.	down	awimming N	world	for
78.	radio	too	short	garden
79.	somewhere	in	wrote	cold
80.	483 	today	bad	stopped
81.	and	raín	one	let
32.	plants	liitea	ahipped	work
83.	Mrs. Green	bought	fall	heard
84.	zetting	hear	little	sorry
85.	thing	upset	glasses	came
36.	asked	early	later	SUOMINIU
37.	watering	shake	coming	Laughed
83.	train	second	cried	looked
39.	mikə	opened	bring	anywhero
90.	left	brought	smell	ch

91.	$lon_{S}$	Ю	Lantont	out
92.	lind	stay	goldfish	<i>l</i> nr
93.	kida	Tom	happily	lottor
944.	1 *m	chair a	about	minutes
94.	tow I	stop	tark1.13	note

,

.

## ATT NE IX

## (ma) linguage Task

#### Oral Language Production Task

Picture #1

Directions: Here is a picture of <u>Jim</u> and his dog <u>Susie</u>. (Point to <u>Jim</u> and <u>Susie</u> as the words are pronounced.) I want you to look at the picture for a while. After you look at the picture I'm going to ask you to make up a story about the picture and tell me all you on about the picture. Remember, you are not to just tell is about the picture. Remember, you are not to just tell is about ideas for your story. Before you begin let's meet the people in the picture again. (Point to <u>Jim</u> and <u>Susie</u> and pronounce their names.) (Allow time for viewing.)

Are you ready to begin your story?

(Allow child to begin story. If probing is necessary, suggest that the child begin by saying <u>Once upon a time...</u>)

Picture #2

Directions: Here are some pictures of <u>Mrs. Brown</u> <u>Tom.</u> (Point to <u>Mrs. Brown</u> and <u>Tom</u> as the words are pronounced.) I want you to look at the pictures for a while. After you look at the pictures I'm going to ask you to make up a story about the pictures and tell me everything you can about the pictures.

Remember, you are not to just tell me about what you see in the pictures. Use the pictures to give you ideas for your story. Before you begin, let's meet the people in the pictures again. (Point to <u>Mrs. brown</u> and <u>Tom</u> and pronounce their names.) (Allow time for viewing.)

Are you ready to begin your story?

(Allow child to begin story. If probing is necessary, suggest that the child begin by saying <u>Once upon a time...</u>)

Picture #3

Directions: Here is a picture of the White family-<u>Mrs. White</u>, <u>Mr. White</u>, <u>Judy</u>, and their dog <u>Sam</u>. (Point to the members of the family as you say their names.) I want you to look at the picture for a while. After you look at the picture I'm going to ask you to make up a story about the picture and tell me everything you can about the picture.

Remember, you are not to just tell me about what you see in the picture. Use the picture to give you ideas for your story. Before you begin let's meet the people in the picture again. (Point to <u>Mrs. White, Mr. White, Judy</u>, and their dog <u>Sam</u>.) (Allow time for viewing.)

Are you ready to begin your story?

(Allow child to begin story. If probing is necessary, suggest that the child begin by saying Once upon a time...)

Picture #4

Directions: Here are some pictures of the Hill family--<u>Mr. Hill, Mrs. Hill, Mary Ann</u>, and <u>Don</u>. (Point to <u>Mr. Hill</u>, <u>Mrs. Hill, Mary Ann</u>, and <u>Don</u>.) I want you to look at the pictures for a while. After you look at the pictures I'm going to ask you to make up a story and tell me all you can about the pictures. Remember, you are not to just tell me about what you see in the pictures. Use the pictures to give you ideas for your story. Before you begin let's meet the people in the pictures again. (Point to <u>Mrs. Hill, Mr. Hill, Don, and Mary Ann.)</u> (Allow time for viewing.) Are you ready to begin your story?

(Allow child to begin story. If probing is necessary, suggest that the child begin by saying <u>Once upon a time</u>...)



# Picture #1





• Picture #3



Picture #4

# APPENDIX D

# Guidelines for Determining a Proposition

### Guidelines for Determining a Proposition

In addition to the general requirement that a proposition must contain a finite worb, either implicitly or explicitly stated, the following guidelines are presented for certain specific construc-

tions:

Adjectives: All adjectives, even though they may have been derived from finite verb constructions, are included within the general expression and do not constitute a proposition.

Adverbs: See adjectives, treated same.

Appositives: Appositives do not constitute a proposition.

Auxillaries and Modals: These expressions (e.g., have, do, shall, will, c.m, may, etc.) become part of the verb.

<u>Clauses</u>: All clauses, independent and dependent, contain a finite verb and therefore are considered propositions. This includes noun, adjective, and adverb clauses.

Catenation: In the case of a string of verbs, each finite verb will be considered a separate proposition.

Complex sentence: Each clause, depending upon its complexity of finite verb, constitutes one or more proposition.

Compound sentence: See complex sentence, treated same.

<u>dopula</u>: The copula and linking verbs (e.g., <u>seem</u>, <u>appear</u>, <u>smell</u>, <u>baste</u>, <u>feel</u>) and their complements constitute a proposition.

<u>Conjunctions</u>: All expressions containing a coordinating or subordinating conjunction constitute topics. For example, in the sentence <u>1 are a dog</u>, and a min, and a min], three propositions are noted. In this case the verb is implied.

Direct address: The introductory words in direct address are considered a proposition. For example, <u>She said</u>, "Get out of my house.", fro propositions are noted.

Elliptical expressions: Partial expressions will be treated as if they were complete.

Verbals: Gerunds, infinitives, and participles constitute propositions.

۵. ۲

# APPENDIX E

# Scheme for Classification of Anaphora

a subject of the second s



Amplorie Catogories			
Category	Forms	Function	
1	T, we you he, she, ft, they	To replace or refer to an animate noun of nouns. These forms function as the subject of a sentence.	
Formple:	John walked into the room. He ha	d an apple in his hand.	
	mo, us you him, hor, it, them	To replace or refer to an animite nous or nouse. These forms function as direct obtacts, indirect or prepositions.	
Eccempie:	John walked into the room. Sugar	gave an apple to <u>him</u> .	
3	ít, they	To replace or refer to an inanimate noun or nound. These forms function as the subject of a sentence.	
"xample:	The book is on the table. It has	a green cover.	
	it, them	To replace or refer to an inanimate noun or nouns. These forms function as direct objects, indirect objects, and objects of prepositions.	
Jample	The books are on the table. The g	reen covers are for them.	
	his, hers, its, theirs	To replace or refer to an animate noun or nouns. These forms function as subjects, direct objects, indirect, objects, and objects of prepositions.	
Example:	Jean said, "The books on the table	ars <u>mine</u> ."	
5	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	To replace or refer to an inanimate noun or noting. These forms, function as	

c

Category	Forms	Funct ton
	Y .	<pre>mubjects, direct objects, indirect objects, and obje of prepositions.</pre>
Examply:	John said, the yeu remember th "Yen," Judy replied. "I think	ut book l naw
1	nty, our your his, her, ita, their	~ To replace or refer to an animate noun or nouns. The forms function to indicate possession and function to modify a noun or nouns.
Excepter	John Salling Income her house. H	a had an apple in the brail.
3	ito, thoir	To replace or refer to an animity noun or nound. The forms function to indicate possession and function to modify a noun or nouns.
Example:	John said, "See those books?"	On the table are their covers.
9	this, that, these, those	To replace or refer to a nour of an as subjects, directed objects of objections.
Emispel.	"Youth a los enout!" oried John	1. "Thet is when I would be
10	here, there	To replace or relevants a noun or nound. These forms function to inducible loca- tion on place.
changele:	The boys restau <u>under a tree</u>	orre the boys at a their lunches
11	first, second, third, atc. one, two, three, etc. latter, formar, some. etc.	To replace or refer to a noum or noume. These forms function to indicate a numerical subset.
locumpile :	doon and Mary walked into the r a suit.	oom. The <u>former</u> was wearing

Cutoren	y Form <b>5</b>	Function
1	al', none, etc.	To replace or refer to a neum or neura. These forms indicate inclusiveness or exclusiveness.
rxample	: John, Mike, gnd Pate reced tab Bandwich.	o the room. All gradues a
5 <b>1</b>	nycelt, himselt, our aelven, etc.	To replace of refer to a neur or needs. These lapsr function as reflexives.
hotest	When when a solution of the the the the the transmission of the second the transmission of tra	uit none of the formetion televit, the formethic, fact,
	The dove classification achemes estegories of proposingl substitu categories was bured on the findi- ture and a pressioning of grade	ition. One inclusion of these - ing of the reviewe of litera-

The notion of coreferentiality is inherent is all antece ways anaphora relationships.

. \*AR